City of Westminster
RES... ...OCK
PUBLIC LIBRARIES.

Please take every reasonable care of this book. Protect it from rain. Keep it clean. Do not turn down leaves. Do not expose it to heat.

Borrowers will be held responsible for any damage or loss.

If you change your address or lose your ticket please inform the Librarian at once. Borrowers are responsible for any books borrowed on their tickets, which are not transf...

Borrowers may renew b... for other readers, on applic... by post or telephone.

Borrowers may use thei... Westminster Public Librarie...

Infectious Disease. If infe... out in your house do not retu... inform the Librarian. Borrowe... or knowingly permitting the boo... are liable to a penalty of **£5.**

M.S.C.
CACHEMAILLE,
J.L.V
The Island of Sark
... 69
9
C/RESERVE STOCK

LONDON BOROUGH OF LEWISHAM

LIBRARIES DEPARTMENT

BOOK STORE

Books must be returned on or before the last date stamped below or on the date card. Fines on overdue books will be charged:– ½d per day for the first week (1d minimum), 1d per day for the second week. 2d per day thereafter.

Books are renewable by phone, letter or personal call unless required by another reader.

ALL LIBRARIES are closed on Sundays, Good Friday, Christmas Day, Bank Holidays, and the Saturdays prior to Bank Holidays.

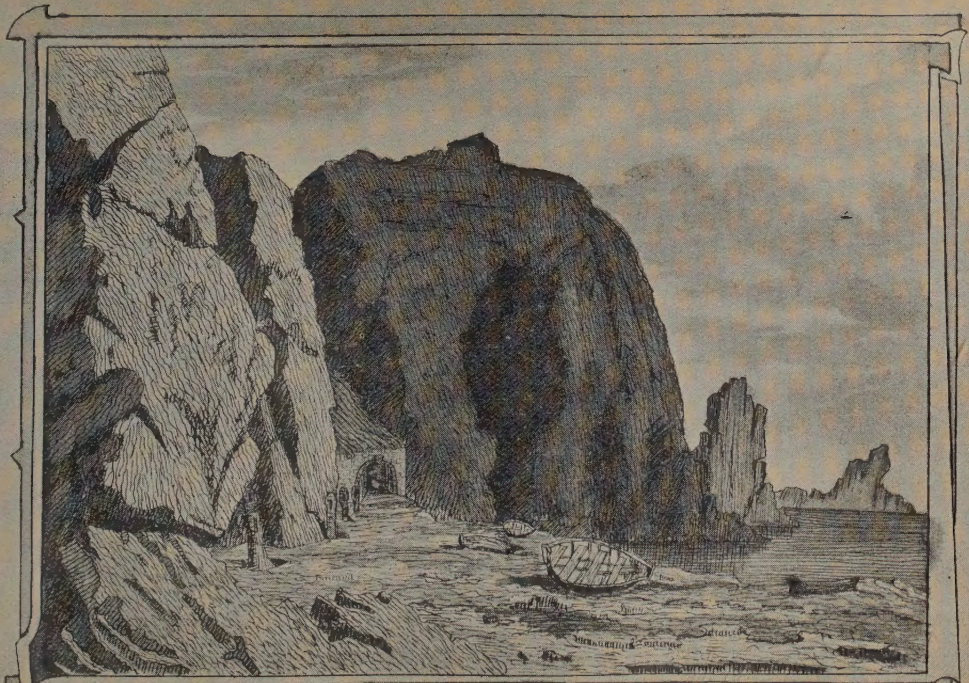
8.8.69

17/4/70.

METROPOLITAN SPECIAL COLLECTION

THE ISLAND OF SARK

CITY OF WESTMINSTER
PUBLIC LIBRARIES



Old Sark Harbour.

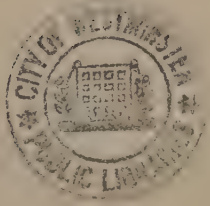
THE ISLAND OF SARK

BY

J. L. V. CACHEMAILLE

EDITED BY

LAURA E. HALE



A. G. REYNOLDS & CO., LTD.
34 DUKE STREET, ST. JAMES'S, S.W.1
1928

[illegible]

Made and Printed in Great Britain

FOREWORD

The history of Sark was originally written in French by the Rev. J. L. V. Cachemaille, Vicar, translated into English by his niece, Miss Louisa Harvey, revised by his friend and patron, the Rev. W. T. Collings, Seigneur of Sark, and published in the monthly numbers of *Clarke's Guernsey Magazine* during the years 1874-5-6. It was very favourably received; and many people, wisely, had the magazines bound. But during the lapse of only half a century these volumes have gradually disappeared, and very few can now be traced.

It is a deplorable loss, as they were much used as a reference to various subjects. So, being one of the oldest inhabitants and very attached to the Island and its people, whom I have learned to know so well, it behoves me—as no one else appears to come forward—and with much encouragement from my friend, Mr. William F. Collings, Seigneur of Sark, to publish this work in book form, thus perpetuating a valuable and unique history of the Island : recognizing, too, how difficult will be the undertaking for possibly a more able historian in the future to gather the material that Mr. Cachemaille spent forty-two

years of research and observation in compiling. Furthermore, even in my recollection, the old Sark with its charming manners and quaint customs has nearly passed away under the rapid invasion—shall we say ?—of civilization, and will be unknown to the coming generation!

I have approached several publishers with a view to bringing out this work, offering them the copyright which I hold, but have been told it would not be a successful undertaking commercially, the Island being so little known. So therefore this must be a personal responsibility of achievement.

I am fortunate in being able to remember when Sark only comprised " The Forty Tenants " and a few smaller landowners who were all Island people. There were besides only three residential families, viz. the Seigneur, Clergyman and Doctor, whom we will hope were necessary to the well-being of this little community forming one big friendly family.

Sark, 1928.

LAURA E. HALE.

THE ISLAND OF SARK

It is most difficult to compile a history of Sark, in default of the documents necessary for such a purpose ; and the difficulty makes itself felt more especially in reference to the earliest periods.

The Island is very small, being but three miles long, by one mile and a half in breadth. Seen from the sea, it presents the aspect of a rock rising almost perpendicular all round, to the height of between two and three hundred feet ; except in one or two places—and even these at the first glance appear inaccessible. Therefore it has not attracted the same amount of attention as the sister islands of Guernsey and Jersey, which doubtless were visited and inhabited during the same period.

During its prehistoric time, the summit must have been a naked surface, bare of tree or shrub, sparsely covered with grass. Perhaps, during the lapse of ages, it was the habitation of seabirds, which contributed to the formation of its soil.

It is impossible to say in what age it received its first inhabitants ; probably long before the Christian Era. The result of accident most

probably led to the landing of some stray navigators on its shores.

In all likelihood the first inhabitants were Celts, who brought with them the religion of the Druids. They must have been numerous ; for small as it is Sark possessed several cromlechs, some of which were large ; others of moderate size ; others again are simply cysts. Not many years since, the whereabouts of ten cromlechs could be perfectly distinguished ; but all have now disappeared, with the exception of two nearly entire cysts. A few great stones which originally belonged to these cromlechs, may still be seen here and there, the rest have been broken up to construct walls and houses. A great number of stone troughs of all sizes have been found ; and cartloads of round or elongated mullers. Many of those troughs and mullers have been preserved as curious relics of bygone times ; besides, quantities of stone knives, hammers, hatchets, amulets or discs of stone and clay-beads. In a word, Sark has had its Stone Age ; as well proved, defined, and developed as that of other localities. These stone records demonstrate that the Island was inhabited at a very remote period.

Here it is important to remark, that all the stones employed in the formation of the cromlech, and all the tools, implements, and ornaments of this period are certainly the produce of the Island ; and that none of them, with the exception of two or three knives and flint, have been im-

ported, as was frequently the case elsewhere. It is evident that when these Druids came to the Island, they did not bring with them the possessions they acquired in the country they had quitted ; from whence they may have been compelled to make sudden flight. Had they come from the neighbouring coast of France as voluntary emigrants, it is to be presumed that they would have brought over a great number of their tools—implements made of the stone of the land they had left—or of the rocks of France—differing conspicuously from those of Sark.

Neither is it possible to say whether these people built houses, or cultivated the ground. Fragments of Celtic pottery made by hand, and baked by the sun, have been found ; unquestionably belonging to the same period. In some parts of the Island, this pottery has been discovered at a depth of two or three feet below the surface embedded in cinders.

No document or indication exists which would enable us to form a judgment as to the duration of this period. No one knows when, how, or why these people left the Island, nor how long a time elapsed after their disappearance until the day when the Island welcomed its new colonists. The traces of its existence are there, nothing more ; and then Sark once more became a desert island. We may perhaps imagine that some pirate vessel —there were many such in those early days— massacred and pillaged the inhabitants. This

supposition is supported by the fact that this was precisely what happened in later times; as we shall see in due course.

We pass on to another section of the history of Sark, which we may style the Second Period.

This long epoch ushers us into the domain of history properly so called, beginning with the sixth, and ending with the sixteenth, century of the Christian Era. Yet although it embraces a thousand years, it is comparatively barren of documentary and historical incident, and will occupy but little space in this sketch.

Were it possible to make careful research into the archives of the Diocese of Coutances, papers might come to light containing more ample and abundant information than we now possess concerning Sark. But the isolation and insignificance of the Island easily account for its casual mention in the history of those early times.

The arrival of St. Magloire in Sark, about the middle of the sixth century, marks the commencement of this period. Event of ancient date indeed !—full of vital interest to the lonely rock, because of the motive and aim which actuated St. Magloire in coming to it.

What follows is extracted from a pamphlet entitled "*Researches among the Isles of the Cotentin in general, and the mission of St. Magloire in particular.* By M. le Comte de Gerroille, Valognes. 1846."

Soon after the death of St. Hélier, the Island of

Jersey was visited by another missionary, who came from the coasts of Brittany, adjacent to Jersey.

The Lord of the Island—who was named "L'Oiseau"—had been cured by St. Magloire. With the consent of this Count l'Oiseau, St. Magloire undertook the spiritual conquest of the isles of the archipelago of Cotentin. He sailed from the coast of Brittany, which was nearest to Jersey, passed by that island without remaining there, and crossed over to Sark, where he established his head-quarters. Upon this probably uninhabited rock, so difficult of access, he established himself with sixty-two companions, amongst whom, it may be presumed, were to be found the necessary workmen for the erection of an oratory and its cells.

After several years of evangelical labours, this holy missionary died in the Island of Sark. His body was removed to Jersey, and some centuries later to the Priory of Lehon (arrondissement de Dinan). From thence it ultimately came to Paris.

As early as the first half of the twelfth century the Oratory of Sark had been given by the family of Vernon—which was descended from the founder of the Abbey of Montebourg—to the friars of this monastery. Special mention of this may be found in a dozen charters, ranging from the reign of Stephen of Blois, in 1136, to that of Richard Cœur de Lion, in 1196. In all of them

the Chapel of St. Magloire is spoken of ; with its enclosure ; with its pilgrim guests, or fellow commoners ; with a second enclosure ; with a watermill, having in addition a tank or reservoir, together with several sluices along the rivulet near the sea.

There might be obtained the pasturage for the animals belonging to the convent.

It was required that a monk from the Monastery of Montebourg, should always perform the services of the chapel. It strikes us as very remarkable that *one* monk only is ever spoken of in the charters of this period. To him was granted a salary in money, and for his warmth and cooking requirements, firing was *passed* into Sark in the shape of a certain quantity of straw, of " whatever kind he selected " . . . the meaning of which is, that sometimes it was oaten straw, and sometimes wheat. There was neither wood nor coal upon the Island.

Half a century after the abandonment of Normandy by King John, Odon Rigault, Archbishop of Rouen, visited the monasteries of his ecclesiastical province. He was at Montebourg on September 1st, where he found thirty-seven monks and four priors. Amongst these priories, that of these Isles had but one monk belonging to it. This was an irregularity. St. Magloire's Priory in Sark was the only one owned by this abbey in the islands, and it is remarkable that it never possessed any other benefice.

All perplexity with regard to this priory is removed by a note from the English Exchequer some time in the year 1338. The note says in so many words "The allowance for the food of the convent (St. Magloiri in insula Sargiensi) must be paid."

The name *insula Sargiensi* is identical with that given to the Island of Sark at the time when the body of St. Magloire was transported to St. Mannelies in Jersey. . . . *Translatum ex insula Sargiensi.* Not content with the sequestration of the foreign priories, Henry V, one of the successors of Edward III, confiscated them entirely about the year 1412. From this moment the monks of Montebourg ceased to inhabit the Island of Sark ; a secular priest from England or from Guernsey performed the duties of the Church of St. Magloire.

From henceforth, until the middle of the sixteenth century, the Church of St. Magloire is heard of no more.

We have seen that in the twelfth century there was a Chapel or Church of St. Magloire in Sark, with an Oratory of St. Eustache and two enclosures for the priory ; and the pasturage of the animals belonging to the convent throughout the Island.

The De Vernon family had a bailiff charged with the administration of their domains ; and a man to bring the harvest into the Seigneur's barn.

In the ensuing century—the same which saw

the separation of Normandy from the islands—a Bishop of Coutances took a census of the churches of his diocese, in which the Isle of Sark was the twelfth of the Deanery of Guernsey. It possessed tithes, of which part reverted to the Bishop of Avranches; and part, including the casual revenue of the church, belonged to the curé of the parish. From a valuation of what the tithe brought in to the Bishop of Avranches, and what remained to the curé for his portion of the tithe, and for the dues of the church interior, a fair idea may be formed of the state of culture and amount of population upon the Island in the middle of the thirteenth century.

From the foregoing it will be perceived that the Island was cultivated all over, perhaps quite as much so as it is at the present day. Traces of cultivation may be seen in parts now left as open common.

The population must have been considerable. And yet it is clear that when the Seigneur, Hélier de Carteret, came to settle in the Island, there was not a house upon it, nor any vestige of habitation. Where, then, did the people lodge? How did they shelter themselves from the inclemency of the weather—often, particularly in winter, tolerably severe? Numbers of earthy holes, two or three feet deep, containing pottery and cinders, have been found close together in certain localities: perhaps their cooking operations were performed in the open air.

In the year 1836 the boundary of the foundations of what was supposed to be the dwelling-place, or oratory of St. Magloire, was yet visible in that part of Sark which is still called the Moinerie ; but no traces of any cells were visible. A short and ancient wall may still be seen below the cascade at Port du Moulin, which must have been built for the formation of the platform on which stood the watermill of St. Magloire.

It is towards the end of this period that mention must be made of an event of disastrous import to the Island, although some degree of uncertainty, at least as to its details, exists in the chronicles of the time. If but a legend, it may be founded upon real and ascertained fact, however exaggerated or embellished by the narrator. We insert it without vouching for its truth.

An old Latin manuscript, belonging to Sir Philip de Carteret, gives an account of the following stratagem, carried out by some persons from Rye and Winchelsea. It appears by the above MS. that the inhabitants of Sark were at that time a set of marauders, holding out false lights in the night, to decoy the unwary sailor, in order to cause shipwrecks on the rocks.

With the view of expelling this horde of pirates, the following stratagem is said to have taken place sometime in the reign of Edward III (fourteenth century). The crew of this Sussex vessel pretended the death of its master, and besought the inhabitants of Sark to suffer the body to be interred in the chapel of the Island ; which request was granted, upon condition that those who attended the funeral should come on

shore unarmed ; to which they submitted, and were all searched. A coffin filled with arms was landed, which the inhabitants permitted to be carried by the crew into the Chapel. Then shutting the door, and arming themselves with the weapons they had concealed, they sallied out against the inhabitants, unprepared for an attack little expected ; and having taken possession of the Island, they drove the rest of the inhabitants away.

After this affair, not the slightest information concerning Sark is to be met with, up to the year 1549. It probably remained deserted, without any domicile whatever. We may but imagine from time to time the arrival of some vessel requiring shelter, or the landing of persons from motives of curiosity ; or that the Island became a temporary refuge for pirates.

It was most probably one of the stations for the conger fishery ; conger being abundant round about, and much sought after before the discovery of Newfoundland. The northern portion of the Island still bears the name " Epercherie," doubtless bestowed upon it on account of the poles (perches) on which the fishermen suspended (*éperchoient*) their fish in order to dry them.

Falle's *Chronicle of Jersey* records another event that happened about this time, which will terminate what we have to say respecting this period, and will be a species of introduction to that next ensuing.

During the time that H. Corniche was Lieutenant of the Island of Jersey, numbers of the King's ships came to Guernsey.

Now, at that time there was war between Edward VI. King of England, and Henry II, King of France.

Since the aforesaid English men-of-war were at Guernsey, eleven galleys belonging to the King of France, anchored off L'Epercherie, in the Isle of Sark . . . 1549, The galleys easily effected a landing in this Island, for there was no force, nor anyone to defend it ; because for two hundred years it had been uninhabited, and no one dwelt there.

They put four hundred men ashore, with the intention of remaining there, and they constructed three small forts ; one close to L'Epercherie in Great Sark ; another near the Coupée in Little Sark ; the third, which was the smallest, near the Château des Quenivez. An officer named Captain Bruel was in charge of these forts, and held the Government of the Island.

But after a sojourn of five or six years, they grew weary of their hardships ; because they had no means of growing corn, and could not procure the necessaries of life ; so that by degrees they returned to their country, one by one, till at last only a few remained by Captain Bruel.

It came to pass about that time that sundry ships from Holland came to Guernsey ; fitted out to make war against the French, who still garrisoned the Isle of Sark, of whom the greater number, through poverty and discouragement, had betaken themselves to their own land, therefore was the conquest of the Island most easy.

The Flemings embarked in their small boats and came ashore at Little Sark ; accompanied by a few Guernseymen to show them the way to the forts. Arriving at

night they found no watch ; making directly upon the forts, they seized the sleeping garrison in their beds, without encountering the slightest resistance.

Now being masters of Sark, the Flemings sent a deputation to Queen Mary, who had lately married King Philip of Spain, to offer the Island of Sark to Her Majesty as a present ; advising her of the manner in which they had driven the French out of it.

But she made no account of their gift, and granted them neither recompense nor reward. Whereupon did the Flemings return discontented ; and Sark remained uninhabited as aforetime.

But that it might not be re-occupied by the French, persons were despatched by Sir Hugh Powlet, Captain of the Island of Jersey, to demolish the forts that had been erected by the French. After which they returned to Jersey, leaving the Isle of Sark vacant ; no one wishing to abide there, nor to live there on any account.

Now the Lord of Glatney, in the land of Normandy, perceiving that Sark was thus without inhabitants, went to the King of France and laid before him the manner in which Captain Bruel had lost the Island, and had permitted its capture without having made the least defence ; and how through his fault and negligence the Island was now uninhabited. He prayed the King of France to give him this Island ; to grant it to himself and his descendants as a heritage ; and that he would have it colonised at his own cost and expense. The King granted his request ; and the Seigneur de Glatney sent a number of persons to the Island, thinking it would thus become peopled. But not long after, war broke out between the Queen of England and the King of France, on account of Havre de Grâce ; which eventuated in Sark being once more without inhabitants, as aforetime.

We have now reached the termination of the Second Period of the history of Sark. A long period in the matter of years : the events contained within it are but few, yet are they of the most vivid interest.

It may be said that God vouchsafed great favour towards this Island, in guiding hither the steps of the devoted and zealous Christian St. Magloire, and in leading him to select its quiet retirement as the place where he might accomplish the desire of his Christian heart, namely the preparation of evangelists for the conversion of the neighbouring islands to Christ.

Thus it became a Holy Island. It was truly set apart and consecrated to the Lord. Its little colony of faithful people was entirely devoted to Christ, and the Isle was a fountain from which blessings flowed forth.

We now enter upon the Third and last Period of the history of Sark. Its commencement is comparatively recent ; and it continues down to modern times. The Island now received a new colony, which differed in many particulars from any preceding attempt at occupation, and held out fair promise of becoming established on a permanent footing. At its head was a man of intelligence, prudence, activity, and perseverance, who laid his foundations upon a solid basis.

Yet, however recent may be the date of this colonization, historical documents concerning it do not abound. Neither is there much for the

historian to record. The reason is not far to seek ; the Island is very small, and it lay out of the usual path of ships and traffic. It had little communication with the adjoining islands, and possessed only small creeks for harbours. The inhabitants have almost always been small farmers, whose wants were sufficiently supplied by the product of their fields or nets ; their requirements did not necessitate frequent visits to the neighbouring islands to procure stores which Sark could not supply ; neither manufactures nor native industries existed ; and the absence of commerce tended to the isolation of the Island. But at length, commencing with the year 1564, it emerged in a great measure from its isolation, and many changes ensued, which we shall notice in due course. What follows is translated from the *Chronicles of Jersey*, written in 1732 by a descendant of the De Carterets, of St. Ouen :

Now the Seigneur of St. Ouen, seeing the said Island of Sark thus vacant and uninhabited as before, considered within himself that danger might happen to the Island of Jersey as well as of Guernsey, if the French again took possession of the said Island ; he considered also that if it remained uninhabited it would be a nest of robbers and pirates, who would always take refuge there to watch poor merchants who trafficked among the Islands of Jersey and Guernsey, which in every way would turn to the injury and prejudice of the said Islands. Moreover, he considered that if he could find means of colonizing the said Island, although the thing at the commencement was very difficult and vexatious, he might have some profit in time,

from the rents and revenues which he might afterwards gather and receive each year, and from many other casual circumstances which might occur.

In consequence of which, and the premises considered, and after having well thought of these matters, he went to Guernsey in company with the Commissioners appointed by Queen Elizabeth and her Council, in September, 1563, to sell all waste lands in these Islands, and altogether they sought the advice of the Captain of Guernsey. The said Captain, after having well weighed and considered the aforesaid things from every point of view, said to the Seigneur of St. Ouen, that if he pleased to take the business in hand, they would give their free and hearty consent. And thus the said Seigneur of St. Ouen took the Island of Sark of the said Commissioners, by virtue of their authority and commission, for himself and his heirs for ever, in such sort as that the Seigneuries of Sark and of St. Ouen should for ever be united together and descend in like manner on the payment of 50 sols sterling to the receipt of the Crown as appears by the said agreement, made in the year 1563, though the date of the patent was not till August 6th, 1565.

The Seigneur of St. Ouen being entirely determined to colonize the Island of Sark, and especially seeing the great courage and goodwill of Madame, his wife, cultivated a small piece of land for the first year, which was in the year 1564, to ascertain if the soil would yield good wheat and other grain, which piece of ground produced well, and had wheat in abundance, according to the quality of the land : for which circumstance the said Seigneur rejoiced very greatly, and returned thanks and praises to God with all his heart.

The year following [1565] the said Seigneur and Madame went to live in Sark ; but they had to carry

with them all that was needful, such as bread, drink, wheat, grain, malt, beer, wine, cider, food and all other substance ; the whole of which they had to convey by water.

There was in all the Island neither house nor home ; excepting a little vaulted Chapel where the Seigneur with his Lady and followers took shelter till they had found means to reconstruct some stone walls near the chapel, where a church had formerly stood, more than two hundred years before.

Here they erected a dwelling-place which they thatched with fern to keep out the rain and wind, whilst they sent for wood, reed straw, and all other requisites for building houses, not only for themselves but for their people.

They likewise sent for horses and oxen to plough the ground ; and for cows to increase their stock of provisions by the addition of milk and butter ; and for wood to build their houses, and to make ploughs and carts, spades, forks, and all the other necessary implements for the tillage and cultivation of the land ; as also wood to burn and trees to plant. Everything had to traverse the sea, which caused enormous outlay. Besides all this, the Island was covered with rabbit warrens, fernbrakes, heaths, brambles, thorns, and every sort of brushwood, so that it was a mere waste, and the prospect of bringing it into cultivation seemed hopeless. There was not even a road nor any kind of way by which a cart might pass ; neither was there any harbour where the boats might be unloaded, without immense expenditure of time, pains, and money.

Notwithstanding all this, the Seigneur and his wife abated not one jot of their courage. Little by little they reclaimed the warrens, and destroyed the rabbits. They had the thorns and briars dug up and removed ; they cut down and levelled the banks, irregularities of the

ground, and other obnoxious matters, to such good effect that excellent harvests of wheat, barley, oats, parsnips and other vegetables were obtained throughout the Island, such as are still enjoyed at the present day.

There were at this time [but this now refers to the year in which this quaint chronicler is writing, namely, 1732] forty or fifty small farmers in the Island, each possessed of a house and sufficient land for the sustenance of their cattle, cows, horses, sheep, and pigs, and for the maintenance of their families ; so much so that many people from Normandy and elsewhere came to Sark every year to purchase grain, sheep, and other things which they might require. And, more than this, all who visited the Island, from whatsoever quarter they might come, were well received and liberally entertained, without payment.

As soon as the Seigneur of St. Ouen saw that the Island was peopled, and that God had blessed and prospered his work and enterprise, he sent for a minister to come and preach the Gospel and teach the Word of God, and to remain in Sark during his lifetime. His name was Cosmé Brévin, native of Angouville, Normandy. And now the Word of God is purely and freely preached in Sark, the Sacraments are duly administered, insomuch that neither in all the Isles nor elsewhere is there a better reformed church ; nor a place where the people are more wisely ruled and brought up in the fear of God, than in the Island of Sark.

After the Seigneur of St. Ouen had thus colonized the Island of Sark, had established order within it, and organized a good system of police, he determined to go to England, to Her Majesty the Queen Elizabeth.

To her, and to her Privy Council he presented the map of Sark and of the surrounding islands, with their distances and situation. Wherein Her Majesty and Her

whole Council did take singular delight ; and in consideration of the trouble, the labour, and the expense incurred by the said Seigneur before the Island was brought into the excellent order in which it was at that present, Her Majesty, by the advice of Her Council, created the Island a "fief Haubert" [or Royal Fief] ; renewed the lease made to the said Seigneur and gave it to him and to his heirs for ever, on payment yearly of 50 sols sterling to the receipt of the Queen in the Island of Guernsey, as may be seen in the Patent and Charter of the Seigneur of St. Ouen, dated in the 7th year of Her Majesty's reign. Anno 1565.

In addition, because of the true fidelity of the Seigneur of St. Ouen towards Her Majesty, and because of his diligence concerning the Island of Sark, Her Majesty gave him six fine pieces of artillery, with all their appurtenances and their mountings : also some powder ; and two demi-culverins, weighing twenty-nine cwt. each ; two sakers of sixteen cwt. a piece, and two falcons, weighing nine cwt. a piece ; for each gun fifty iron balls, with two hundred pounds of powder.

All these guns were furnished with all their appurtenances and carriages, perfectly new ; taken from the Tower of London, for the defence of Sark. The Seigneur of St. Ouen had them all brought to Sark, and placed them where they would best serve the interests, defence, and convenience of the Island.

And when the Seigneur of St. Ouen goes to visit Sark, these cannon are fired with great triumph for the man, and out of the respect they have for their noble Seigneur.

As there was no harbour in Sark for the loading and unloading of what was taken away or brought into the Island by sea : nor for the safekeeping of the boats ; nor any cart road, the Seigneur of St. Ouen, after having

made careful examination of the Island, selected a creek (creux) or bay, situated on the S.S.E. of the Island, for his harbour.

He sent for the requisite workmen, who made a breakwater, the Chaussé St. Chené, two perches long, twenty feet in height and in breadth, of great stones and earth. He also pierced the cliff for the passage of vehicles into the Creek beyond. In this manner he made a place of embarkation and disembarkation, and a shelter for the boats which could be drawn up high and dry, beyond the reach of tempests. He had a road made from the summit of the Island to the harbour, following the windings of the valley at the bottom of which lies the harbour : which was a very great convenience to the whole Island.

After having completed the road and the harbour, he made ramparts in all dangerous parts of the Island where a landing might be effected ; and broke up and destroyed all the paths to the bays and creeks, and dangerous lurking places in the Island, so that with the help of God it was impregnable. He likewise built a windmill. [The doorway of which still bears his shield, and over that the date 1571.] He enclosed for himself several fields containing about three hundred vergées of land, or more, and planted the hedges with withys, white and black thorn. He planted many fruit and forest trees, and cultivated the growth of furze and broom for fuel. He caused many fine fountains and wells to be made, containing good water ; and ponds for pisciculture. In a word, he so well arranged and provided for Sark in all respects, that it is now rich in cattle of all kinds, in grain, in vegetables, in pasture, in all things necessary to human life.

About the year 1580, Hélier de Carteret, Seigneur of St. Ouen, seeing that his eldest son, now aged twenty-six years, was a stalwart man and great hearted, very wise,

discreet, and modest, confided to him the charge and government of the Island of Sark, with all its revenue and profit for his maintenance. This eldest son, Philippe de Carteret, conducted himself in all wisdom and discretion in his government to the great peace and contentment of his father, and of all the inhabitants of the Island of Sark.

In connection with the foregoing chapter it will now be proper to give a sketch of, and some extracts from, the original Letters Patent, under the Great Seal, dated August 6th, A.D. 1565 (seventh year of Queen Elizabeth's reign).

These Letters Patent recite first the many reasons which induced Her Majesty to make the grant. (The original is in Latin.)

GRANT OF SARK BY QUEEN ELIZABETH "IN CAPITE" TO HILARY DE CARTERET, LORD OF ST. OUEN, JERSEY.

Elizabeth, by the Grace of God, of England, France, and Ireland, Queen, Defender of the Faith, etc., to all to whom these presents shall come, greeting. Whereas our Island of Serke, situate near our Islands of Guernsey and Jersey, within our Dutchy of Normandy, is now and hath been for a long time past, void, waste, uninhabited and not cultivated, manured, or occupied by any of our subjects—during which time not only we and our progenitors have lost the ancient and accustomed profits, rents, revenues, incomes and emoluments, from thence long since, and of old time, due to our progenitors and precedings—neither has any of our beloved and liege subjects, for many years past, had any advantage, emolument or profit from thence upon that account but also, the same Island, by reason of its being waste and deserted hath, therefore, during the same time been and is still, in

time of war, a convenient place, access and cover, to conceal and confederate our enemies, attempting hostilities on our said Islands, and others of our dominions; and in time of peace, pirates, thieves, and such like, endeavouring to lay wait for and plunder our beloved subjects, inhabiting our aforesaid Islands of Jersey and Guernsey and others adjacent to them, frequenting them or trafficking among themselves to the great harm and no small damage of all our subjects inhabiting the aforesaid Islands, to our certain knowledge. We, therefore, maturely consulting and providing for the safety and tranquillity of the State and weal-publick of the aforesaid Islands, and also, greatly weighing and pondering all things and circumstances, to be considered in that behalf, are persuaded that nothing will be more proper, or more expedient for the subduing, expelling, and rooting out such enemies, pirates and thieves from the aforesaid Island of Serke, than, as much as may be, to order, take care and provide that our abovementioned Island of Serke be, for ever in time to come, occupied, possessed, and inhabited by Englishmen and others of our natural subjects. Know ye therefore, that we, as well for, as in consideration of the sum of £50 of good and lawful money of England, beforehand, well and truly paid at the receipt of our said Island of Guernsey in the hands of our beloved servant Nicholas Carey, gent., our Receiver-General, in our said Island, for our use, by our beloved subject, Hilary de Carteret, Esq., Lord of the Seigniory, Lordship or Fee Haubert, of St. Ouen in the said Island of Jersey, of which we acknowledge ourselves to be fully satisfied and paid, and that the said Hilary de Carteret, his heirs, executors and administrators, are acquitted and exonerated thereof and of every parcel thereof, by these present, of our especial grace, certain knowledge and mere motion, have given and granted and

by these presents, for us, our heirs and successors, give and grant unto the aforesaid Hilary de Carteret, Esq., Lord of the Seignory Lordship or Fee Haubert of St. Ouen, in the said Island of Jersey, or by whatever other name or surname he may be called or known, all that our foresaid Island of Serke, with all its rights, members, liberties and appurtenances, and all and singular castles, fortresses, houses, buildings, structures ruined with their fragments, lands, meadows, pastures, commons, wastes, woods, waters, watercourses, ponds, fees, rents, reversions, services, advowsons, presentations, rights of patronage, of rectories, vicarages, chapels or churches, and also all manner of tithes, oblations, fruits, obventions, mines, quarries, ports, shores, rocks, wrecks of the sea, shipwrecks, farms, fee-farms, knights' fees, wards, marriages, escheates, reliefs, heriots, goods and chattels waived, goods and chattels of felons, fugitives or pirates, or felons de se, out-laws, of persons put in exigent, and the forfeited or confiscated goods of persons condemned or convicted any other way whatsoever; also all forfeitures, paunages, free warrens, courts leet, views of frank pledge, assize and assay of bread, wine and beer; all fairs, markets, customs, rights of tolls, jurisdictions, liberties, immunities, exemptions, franchises, privileges, commodities, profits, emoluments, and all the Queen's heredits whatsoever with every of their appurts, situate within the seas or sea-coasts contiguous or appertaining to the Island, or within its shores, limits or precincts, and whatever were held, known, or accepted as members or parts of the Island of Serk. The Queen also grants to the said H. de Carteret the aforesaid Island with all its rights and privileges [here follows again the long enumeration above given] in as ample a manner and form as any of our progenitors, Kings of England, or any other having possession or

seized of the said Island, ever lawfully had, held, or enjoyed . . . to have, to hold and enjoy the aforesaid Island of Serk, etc., etc., of us, in capite, by the 20th part of a Knight's fee ; and by paying for the same annually to us 50 shillings of good and lawful money of England, provided that if the said H. de Carteret his heirs, or assigns do not cause or procure the said Island within two years, and so hereafter from time to time to be continually inhabited, dwelt in or occupied by 40 men at least, our subjects, or such as shall oblige themselves by oath to our Captain (Governor) of our Island of Jersey or Guernsey, that they will be faithful, true, or obedient to us, the Queen, and our heirs or successors. . . . That when the said H. de Carteret or heirs shall forfeit to us by way of punishment or penalty £10, to be taken and levied out of his lands, tenements, goods, etc. And if after such first default, and after an admonition given the said H. de Carteret do not within six months then next following make up the aforesaid number of 40 men at least, he shall forfeit £20. . . . The next forfeit shall be £40. If a third admonition is not obeyed, then these, the Queen's Letters Patent "shall cease and be void, and it shall be lawful for the Queen, her heirs, etc., to re-enter in the said Island of Sark." Another proviso "that H. de Carteret or his heirs shall not give, sell, or alienate all his whole Estate without Licence of the Queen, her heirs or successors." Nevertheless, "We grant to the said H. de Carteret or his heirs, that it shall be lawful for him and them at all times, for the future, or from time to time, for ever, during the force and virtue of these our letters patent, at his or their pleasure, to lease, grant, and farm some parts or parcels of the said Island of Sark, by indentures, to be sealed with his seal or theirs, for term or terms of life, lives, years, for ever, or otherwise in as ample and in the

like manner and form as the said H. de Carteret or his ancestors or any others, seized in fee-simple, of other lands held of us in capite, have made use to lease grant or farm. Such leases and letting out to farm, to be made under the seal of the said H. de Carteret, to be as equally valid, firm, and effectual in law as if they were made or granted under the seals of Guernsey or Jersey.

"By Brief of Privy Seal," etc.

On reading over the conditions upon which the Letters Patent were granted, it becomes plainly manifest, that the first object of the Seigneur de Carteret would be to secure the permanent residence of, at least, forty able-bodied men, on whom he could rely for the safeguard of the Island. No doubt this was in those days a matter of no small difficulty. The neighbouring islanders were rooted to the soil of their birth, and little disposed to migrate to what appeared a barren rock. If we examine the earliest register we cannot fail to remark, what is indeed natural to expect, that a great number of the family names are those belonging to the parish of St. Ouen, over whom, we may conclude, the Lord of St. Ouen possessed great influence. But besides these there are a few names English, and at least one or two even Lowlandish, in sound, which would indicate that he was obliged to gather every waif and stray that he could find. Yet we know he received help from Guernsey, for this is confirmed by the wording of the very first contract or grant which the Seigneur made in favour of his

devoted friend, Nicholas Gosselin, Esquire, of that island. This is dated in 1567, and Hélier de Carteret therein declares his very great obligations towards the said Mr. Gosselin for his untiring energy, pains, and perseverance in assisting him in that most difficult and dangerous work of the colonization of Sark. Here again in looking at the registers we perceive the result of the exertion of a man of influence in bringing with him certain families—few indeed in proportion to the St. Ouen settlers, but which we may recognize by their names as undoubtedly natives of Guernsey.

As a proof of his friendship and deep gratitude towards Mr. Gosselin he cedes " to him and his heirs for ever " a considerable extent of land called Beauregard, situated in the western district of Sark, free of all Corn Rents and subject only to a yearly payment of 54 sols sterling, and the other seigniorial dues. Moreover he gives him (the said Mr. Gosselin) one-half of all waifs of the sea (*gravage*) which might be found in the bays or along the coast bounding this estate. Lastly, as an especial mark of favour [nowhere to be found in any other lease or contract at Sark] the Seigneur gives him the right of chase (" *la chasse et prise de conils et toute sorte d'oiseaux* ") over the said land; not omitting, however, to retain over it, for himself and his heirs, the Seigneur's own right of chase, but in his and their proper persons only.

One condition more, but which has an import-

ant bearing on the continued habitation of the Island, and on the fulfilment of the terms of the Royal Patent. The grantee of this large section of the Island, so long as he or his heirs continued to reside upon it for the greater part of the year, was bound by the terms of the grant to provide *four* men to inhabit the premises. But if, hereafter, Mr. Gosselin or his heirs went to reside elsewhere, then they must cause their estate to be inhabited by five men at the least. Accordingly at a later date (1598) we find Mr. Hilary Gosselin, son and heir of the above, obtains the Seigneur's permission to divide this large estate into four, fixing upon *one*, the largest of these portions, an obligation to provide *two* men fit to serve in the defence and safeguard of the Island. Similar were the arrangements made for furnishing the remaining *three* able-bodied men to complete the muster of *five*, due by the original grantee.

There still remained thirty-five which the Seigneur must find to make up the forty men required by his duty to the Crown.

After reserving for himself a goodly portion, about 300 vergées (perhaps 140 English acres) in the very centre of Sark, the Seigneur next proceeded to divide the remainder of the land among thirty-five of the colonists to secure their permanent residence. He gave to each a small section of arable land, varying in extent from, in some cases, no more than twenty vergées to as many as sixty ; but always with a considerable

portion besides of cliff-down (*Côtils*) offering fair pasturage for sheep and young cattle. This he leased out to each of them "*in perpetuity*" under certain conditions; namely, that the "tenant" (local term for "copyholder" or rather what he in fact most nearly represents, the "customary freeholder") should pay him an annual rent of corn; in some cases a money rent besides; together with a couple of capons (in the other islands generally paid every year to the Crown); also that he should build on the land, thus leased to him, a good habitable house, etc., fit for a farm.

In every contract or lease he took care to reserve to himself all seigniorial rights that he possessed, or might possess over the "tenant" and his land, by virtue of his Patent. These include the *tenth* sheaf of wheat, barley and oats, beans, peas, vetches, flax, hemp, and the tithe of apples, lambs, and wool. All these dues were simply a charge upon the land reserved by the Seigneur in selling or leasing it out in perpetuity. The purchaser consequently paid down less money for this purchase—in fact the early contracts *contain no mention of any money being paid down at all.* When of course the land had been cleared and broken up, then there was a new value attached to the land, representing the accumulated labour of the early settlers, and now on re-selling it we begin to find a sum paid down (*bourse déliée*) in part purchase of the same. The

tithes of Sark, however, have been ruled before the Committee of Council to be a right belonging to the Seigneur and not an ecclesiastical tithe. As long as the tenant acquits himself of these ground rents, tithes, and obligations, he has full, entire and inalienable possession of his "*héritage*" for ever. He may not, however, divide, share, or bequeath it; the terms of his purchase oblige him to hand it down to his legitimate heir, in the right line, and without mortgage or encumbrance of any kind whatever, save and except the Seigneur's dues. In default of an heir within the seventh canonical degree, it reverts to the Seigneur.[1] The tenant may indeed sell it, but in its entirety only, and this sale is subject to the "*retraite*."[2] No sale of lands, rents, etc., can take place without the Seigneur's permission, who is paid the thirteenth part of the purchase money. Should a father having more than one estate desire to benefit a younger son or daughter by the gift of one of these estates, he must convey it by means of a formal sale to the said son or daughter, and that with the Seigneur's permission, who, in these

[1] Escheats.—This was the ancient law of Normandy, and it is still the law of Jersey. Fiefs or lands held of the Crown revert to it in default of heirs within the seventh degree, the collateral degrees being reckoned according to the canon law.—See Le Quesne's *Constitutional History of Jersey*, page 86.

[2] Retraite—Should a tenant sell his farm to anyone, the relatives of the seller to the seventh degree may redeem it from the hands of the buyer, on payment of the price given, together with the thirteenth part due to the Seigneur. The time usually allowed, during which the "retraite" may be demanded, is a year and a day, but in Sark it may be closed after forty days, dating from the signing of the contract by the Seneschal.

circumstances, does not exact the thirteenth. The same form is gone through when an elder brother desires to make over his estate to a younger brother or a sister.

If a tenant neglect to pay his rents, dues, etc., during three consecutive years, the Seigneur may re-enter into possession of his estate, after three warnings given in due form.

If a tenant is in debt, his land with the above exception, may not be seized, but only his personal property, and the revenues of his farm, still without prejudice to the seigniorial dues. The debtor may indeed be put in prison, whereupon the Court proceeds to name some competent person to manage the debtor's estate and, from its produce, to liquidate the creditor's demands.

The Old Manor House.

We have elsewhere remarked that the Seigneur reserved for himself the central part of the Island. It was of course necessary to build for himself a habitation. This he established with judicious forethought in the very midst of his territory, whose borders were on every side flanked and guarded by the newly created dwellings and farms of his tenants. Here he built his Manor House on an elevated yet sheltered spot, facing southwards down one of the most picturesque of its valleys. The house still exists, some portions remaining as originally built by the Seigneur de

Carteret. Its front has been re-built and altered, and the interior completely re-arranged. A stone engraved with the De Carteret Arms (a shield having four fusils in fesse) may still be seen on the south shoulder of the western gable. The original walls are of immense thickness, some being from three to four feet, that of the west gable is actually *six-and-a-half feet thick*. There is also a row of buildings, at right angles to the above and facing east, which served as dwellings for the servants, barn, granary, cider press, and stabling. Some of these buildings are still used as formerly ; others are let as separate dwellings. In former times the church, or rather what was used as such and which in Puritan days bore the pretentious name of "Temple," was merely a section included within the middle part of this row of buildings ; differing in no respect from the other habitations. Two families now dwell in this section which formerly served for church, court-house, and school.

There is no lovelier spot on the island than that selected for the ancient Manor House. A charming valley, enclosed by corn-producing hills extending to the mid-distance ; a peep of the blue sea with Jersey and his own more ancient possession of St. Ouen on the distant horizon—such a combination might well tempt a man of cultivated mind like the Seigneur de Carteret to fix upon this for the site of his future residence. Here at this house was born in 1583–4, Philip de

Carteret, Knight, third Seigneur of Sark. It has for nearly a century and a half been given up for the use of the clergyman of the Island, and is now known as the Vicarage ; but the garden and the cottages surrounding it still go by the name of the " Manor "—in Serk patois, " *Monier.*"

The Roads

If the first Seigneur of the Island found no roads of any kind whatever on his arrival, he lost no time in providing these most necessary links between his new colonists. With practical experience of the *then* narrow lanes of Jersey he boldly and liberally marked out highways of unusual width—some measuring from twenty-two to twenty-four feet across. Having likewise no previous settlement to encumber his plan, it will be found that these present no tortuous windings along the table-land of Sark, but run direct from point to point, happily with just sufficient inflection to save the picturesque.

It must be confessed, however, that much of this generous sacrifice of land for the sake of giving width to the public roads was marred by the planting of trees on both sides within this road-space, which again was eaten into by high earth-banks called footpaths. There were ditches also so deep as to be even dangerous, and all these causes combined made it impossible for two carts to pass each other. It was necessary to provide

here and there a recess into which one might be drawn aside to enable the other to get past.

Such was the state of the public roads for a long period, even down to the first quarter of last century. Little or nothing was attempted to amend them till the late Mr. Peter Le Pelley, Seigneur of Sark, introduced in 1835, a very great improvement. He proposed to divide the Island into four cantons, and to place the roads of each canton under the immediate care of its own inhabitants, who naturally would take particular interest in seeing that their road was well kept. The Chief Pleas approved of the plan, and further ordered that the public roads should be made and kept in repair to their full width, and that all the foot-paths and earth-banks should be removed from the road-side. From that time these roads have gradually been improved year by year, and it is surprising to find such wide and generally well-kept roads as we now meet with in almost every part of Sark. They are maintained in repair by the inhabitants : that is to say, all persons having a hearth and home (*feu et lieu*) are obliged to work on the roads for the number of days (generally two) voted annually at the Chief Pleas. Those who possess cart and horse are bound to furnish them and their conductor, while the others bring their spades and their labour—the parish supplying the pickaxes, hammers, etc., for quarrying and breaking stones. Anyone however may be exempted on paying

17½ pence per day, or providing a substitute, owners of carts, etc., paying in proportion more if desirous to be exempt. These fines are then expended by the constables in the employment of the poor upon the roads. The first carriage on springs was brought over by the Lady of Sark, Mrs. E. Le Pelley, in 1840. Its utility was quickly appreciated, and many others have since made their appearance. Some of these are vehicles, cars, or phætons for hire, and are much in request among such visitors as have only a few days to spare and desire to avoid fatigue.

Jurisdiction of Sark

It may be distinctly gathered from the examination of a long petition addressed by the tenants of Sark in 1582, to their Seigneur Sir Philip de Carteret, a son of Hélier de Carteret, that when first Sir Hélier and his son Sir Philip resided in the Island, they were virtually its Governors and Magistrates. It was to them that the tenants addressed their complaints and grievances ; of them that they sought justice, counsel, and advice ; to their judgment they submitted as being perfectly instructed in the laws and customs of Jersey, whence they had come : and it never occurred to the tenants to appeal to the Court of Jersey or any other power against this judgment.

During the more or less frequent or prolonged absence of the Seigneur (necessitated by the

duties of his high position in Jersey) he appointed a Seneschal, as justice of the peace, in case of need. But the petition above alluded to, would show this to have been but a temporary appointment, during the absence of the Seigneur or until he was able to fulfil his plan of going to England to consult the Privy Council, respecting the regular establishment of a Court of Justice adapted to the wants and wishes of the inhabitants, and their Seigneurs.

During this delay, it was rumoured in Sark that two Royal Commissioners were to be sent to enquire into the state of the Island and to report upon it to Her Majesty. Fearing that if they found therein no regular Government, no Court of Justice nor police, the Commissioners would report this disorder to Her Majesty who, with her Privy Council, might impose upon them a constitution which would be neither to their taste nor to their need, the people agreed to petition the Seigneur to assemble the tenants, and to establish a Government, or Court of Justice *in all things similar to that of Jersey;* being above all desirous in no way to be under the Government of Guernsey. In consequence of this petition there was formed and established a Court, in the following manner.

On the 27th October, in the year of Grace 1579, Sir Philip de Carteret having possession of the Island of Sark under his father, the Honorable Hélier de Carteret, Seigneur of St. Owen, and of the said Island of Sark.

And all the residents (*manants*) and inhabitants of the said Island being assembled at the Manor by the advice and consent of the said Hélier de Carteret ; in presence of Sir Philip de Carteret ; by the unanimous consent of all the inhabitants of the Island and even on their suit and petition, a Court and Jurisdiction was constituted and established in the Island, for the observance and keeping henceforward, in every respect of the laws, customs, and usages kept and observed in the Island of Jersey.

That these things might be done and accomplished as set forth by Sir Philip, his father thereunto consenting ; and also on the requisition and by the unanimous consent of all the people of Sark, Edward de Carteret was made, constituted, established and sworn Bailiff [Bailly or Chief Judge] of Sark ; as were likewise ten Jurats, a Procureur de la Reine, who was also Procureur of the Seigneur of Sark, a sergeant-at-arms, a common sergeant, a constable, a centenier, two vingtoniers, and two assistant-constables.

And the Act goes on to say :

The people of Sark earnestly declare their desire to be judged in all matters and causes whatsoever according to the laws, customs, and usages, kept and observed in Jersey ; for the reason that the greater number of the said people of Sark are natives of the Island of Jersey, and with their ancestors and predecessors have always been accustomed to be dealt with in all cases or matters according to the laws, customs, and usages of Jersey. Considering also that if any case of great importance happened in Sark, they might readily obtain counsel and advice of the Judges and other learned men of Jersey ; in order that the people of Sark might from time to time be dealt with and supported in all their causes and affairs

according to the laws, customs and usages, of Jersey. To the maintenance and establishment of all which several points they have hereby freely and voluntarily subscribed their assent and consent of their own good will and with one accord.

[Here follow the signatures.]

It will perhaps be interesting to some of our readers to introduce here a specimen of the Acts of this self-constituted Court of Sark. Commencing with the very first in 1579, and copying it as it stands, in all its original quaintness of diction and orthography, we find it to be in no degree worse, in these respects, than Acts and Ordinances of the same date, emanating from the Royal Court of Guernsey.

PREMIERS CHEFS PLAIDS DE SERK, TENUS LE 5E NOVEMBRE.

A.D. 1579

Les Chefs Pletz d'héritage tenus en l'isle de Serk, en la présence de Monsr. Philippe de Carteret, ayant le gouvernement de ladite isle soubs Monsr. son père, devant le bailly, presents Julian de Carteret, Collas Cristin, Richard Poindextre, Jacques Dolbey, Jehannot Hotton, Raulin Vaudin, Guilleaume Chte, Pierre le Brocq, et Clément Haccoill, jurez, le ve. jour du mois de novembre lan mill v cent septante et neuf.

Il est ordonné par Justice que ung chacun en droit sen verra que ces bestes porchines soyent tellement en annellées quilz ne facent aucun domage a aultrui que si aucun apres avoir este suffissament garny que ses bestes ayent este venus au domage daultruy et quilz ne soyent

enannellées pour de la seconde foye quilz y seront trouvés celuy a qui la faulte sera payra pour chacun beste six esterlings dargent damende à estre levey Incontinent par la main du sergeant.

Such then is a specimen of the Acts and Ordinances of this simple Court administering justice and keeping order among the colonists, who already numbered two hundred souls.

This continued down to about the month of July, 1582.

The Governor of Guernsey, Sir Francis Chamberlayne, and the Bailiff and Jurats of the Royal Court, appear to have taken little notice of the proceedings at Sark, or it is probable that the frequent disputes that arose between them, respecting their several rights and emoluments, engrossed their attention. They once or twice, however, in 1571 and 1572, cited the Seigneur to appear and answer at their Court of Chefs Plaids. This he does not appear to have done, and in 1577, at the instance of the Crown Officers, an Act is taken against him. We hear no more till 1581 when the Royal Court of Guernsey, having heard of the Establishment of the Court of Sark as above related, assembled and passed an Act to authorize Her Majesty's Sheriff to summon Hélier de Carteret, farmer of the Island of Sark, to appear before Justice in Guernsey, and show by what authority Jurats, Justices, and other officers, had been appointed in Sark ; and to account for other deeds done in that Island.

On May 28th, 1582, the Queen's Attorney-General laid before the Court of Guernsey the whole account of that which had been done in Sark in the matter of erecting a jurisdiction as related above. Whereupon it was ordered that the Bailiff and four Jurats, with the Crown Officers, should go to Sark to inquire into these proceedings.

The occasion and manner of this visit are vividly described in a Petition, from the inhabitants of Sark to their Lord, dated July 15th, 1582. The preamble and another quotation which we produce here will serve to prove that there were among the colonists, in 1582, people of education, and Englishmen by birth.

A Petition from the Inhabitants of the Island of Serk to their Lord, 15th July, 1582,

" Greeting, Grace, and Peace through our only Saviour Jesus Christ.

My Lord.—We, trusting upon such hope of good and convenient remedies, will make no doubt to proceed forward and shew unto you the very truth of the premises even so as the same to us here did happen, whereby you shall understand, first, that four or five days before the thirtieth day of May, arrest was made in Guernsey of all the ships or boats, and chiefly of those of Jersey, which were suspected that would sooner bring some new tidings hither until the said day, when did arrive here in the morning the Mr. Captain of Guernsey [Sir Thomas Leighton], the Bailiff, [Thos. Wigmore] and four of the Jurats, with the Procureur, the Clerk, the Prevot, and the

Comptroller, *being accompanied with above forty harque busiers at the least* of the said Isle, who at their arrival were met by Mr. Messervy whom it pleased you to leave here in your place, being accompanied *with a good number of harquebusiers of this Isle*, which, perceiving the said Mr. Captain, they did let him come a land and they did greet him with some shots of harquebuses which each did loose, whereupon he commanded the said Messervy to muster with all speed, which being caused immediately to be assembled, he only took a slight oversight and accompt of the men, amongst whom he would not allow in accompt them that were absent in Jersey or elsewhere about their affairs and also refused some of them that were present, which were always allowed in the former musters, by reason whereof he saying not to find of them the number of XLty men thoroughly furnished, did declare that he would have the forfeiture thereof, and commanded the said Mr. Messervy as being in your stead to see it furnished against his return, shewing plainly, by sundry speeches that he had conceived an ill affection against you and that he would do you an ill turn, after which thing he willed us all to retire, and afterwards causing us over again to be called for *by one at ones* [*sic*] before him, the said Bailiff and officers being present, each one after another was secretly and privately examined by his oath upon several questions, and specially concerning all the lands and duties or rights of the same which we had, and of all those which your Honour had reserved in your hands, and also of the quantity and kinds of rents which we did owe you, either in corn, barley, mowth, oats, money, hens, eggs, or other things whatsoever.—Item, we were also examined of the manner and customs which we do observe among us in our affairs and for pacifying our differences.

This *Invasion*, as it might be almost called of,

the Island of Sark by the Governor of Guernsey with a body of forty soldiers, accompanied by the Bailiff and Jurats of the Royal Court, with Her Majesty's Attorney-General, Comptroller, Sheriff and Registrar, took place about May 25th, 1582. On the 31st, the Court re-assembled at Guernsey and drew up an Act, which after relating all that had passed before them on their visit of inspection and inquiry, and describing the composition of the usurping Court of Sark, ordered that the so-called Bailiff, Edward de Carteret, and two Sark Jurats should appear before the Court of Guernsey, to give account by what authority they had set up this jurisdiction ; rejected that of the Royal Court of Guernsey ; usurped its authority ; and even transferred the deference which was its due to the Court of Jersey.

On June 28th, 1582, Edward de Carteret Bailiff of Sark, and two Jurats, having appeared before the Court of Guernsey, and being unable to show any valid authority for their usurpation of the office of Bailiff and Jurats, the said Edward de Carteret was constituted prisoner in Castle Cornet ; but the two Jurats—because that Sark was so thinly populated—were permitted to return to their homes ; well cautioned, however, not again to exercise any function of Bailiff or Jurat at Sark until further order shall have been taken touching this matter.

On June 18th, 1582, the Queen's Attorney-General demanded of the Court of Guernsey the

seizure of Sark ; because Philip de Carteret, Seigneur of the Island, had as yet neither made nor offered to make homage, nor paid the dues owed to Her Majesty in this Island of Guernsey, of which Sark is a dependence. This, for the preservation and maintenance of the Queen's right and prerogative.

Which demand was granted him ; it being understood that the said Philip de Carteret should be heard in all his just opposition, replies, and defence, if he has any to make, for then would the arrest be null.

On the 19th of the same month, Her Majesty's Sheriff notified to the Court that he had proceeded to Sark and by virtue of his office had given and delivered possession and *saisine* (seisin) thereof to Her Majesty's officers, with all its appurtenances, fruits, rents, and revenues of whatsoever kind that might appertain to Philip de Carteret, throughout the Island of Sark.

Things having come to this pass, in 1583 the Lord of Sark and the Governor of Guernsey appealed to Her Majesty in Council ; and the Lords of the Privy Council, having examined the pretensions of both parties, decreed as follows:

1. The Governor of Guernsey to be supreme in Sark.

2. That there be five Jurats chosen by the inhabitants of Sark ; or if hereafter required by an increase of population, *seven* ; and the eldest to give sentence.

3. These Jurats to hold pleas, and use jurisdiction in

Sark in all causes, &c. Appeals to be from Sark to Guernsey, as to the superior Court.

4. A clerk of the Court to keep record of all such matters as shall pass before them ; the clerk to be always one of the inhabitants of Sark, to be appointed with the consent of the Lord of Sark.

5. A Prévôt (Sheriff) that shall serve to plead the Queen's causes as a Procureur (Attorney) ; to arrest as a Prévôt ; to summon and distrain as a Serjeant : to receive the amerciements of the Court ; and such things as he shall receive due to the Queen to yield account thereof to the receipt of Guernsey. This officer to be always one of the Isle of Sark, and appointed with the consent of the Lord of Sark.

6. A Constable and a Vingtonier, inhabitants of Sark, to be chosen by the inhabitants.

7. Ecclesiastical causes to be referred to the Bishop of Winchester.

8. The " première saisine " to be paid to Her Majesty.

9. The Lord of Sark not bound to answer at the Court of Chief Pleas at Guernsey.

10. Wrecks of the sea appertain to the Lord of Sark, by express words of his Patent.

11. The thirteenths of the sales or transfer of land appertain also to the Lord of Sark, as also the profit called Firmage.

12. Tithe of fish, having so long been abandoned, are not to be paid to the Lord.

13. Customs of wares and anchorage belong to the Queen.

14. Jersey weights and measures to be used in Sark . . . but to be sent to be corrected by the Court of Guernsey.

15. The laws and customs of Alderney be observed in Sark.

16. "Touching ordinances or bye-laws to be made for matters within the Island of Sark, we think convenient to refer to the Lord, and the inhabitants of Sark, from time to time, as they shall see necessary for the welfare of that isle."

17. Sark not to be subject to Guernsey ordinances restricting the exportation of corn, but must keep sufficient in store for the food of the inhabitants.

The "première saisine" [*i.e.* the payment on first possession] was mitigated, being reduced to forty pounds sterling to be paid to the Queen's Receiver of Guernsey.

In obedience to the Order in Council reported above, the Court of Guernsey assembled at Sark on July 16th, 1594, and constituted and established a Court, jurisdiction, and officers, in the said Island of Sark; which officers took oath, and were sworn into their said offices, as the case required: being chosen and approved by the generality of the inhabitants, *videlicet*, five Jurats, a clerk of the Court, a Sheriff, a Sergeant, a Constable, and a Vingtonier.

The following were declared to be the duties of the Jurat and officers of the Court in the performance of their respective charges, and of the rights appertaining to their office.

Forasmuch as Sark has been without habitation for a very long time, and that all memory of customs and ancient usages observed for the police of the Island, has been lost. It is decreed that the said Jurats and officers shall undertake to assemble themselves together three

times a year ; about the first Wednesday after the 29th day of September ; the first Wednesday after the 15th January, and the first Wednesday after Easter-day ; to hold their Chief Pleas ; and that at each of the said Pleas, the said Jurats and officers, by consent of the Lord of the Island and of the generality of the inhabitants, shall make such ordinances as they may find expedient and necessary from time to time for the good government of the police of the Island.

In the administration of justice, these Jurats shall make use of the laws and customs approved and established by authority of Her Majesty at Guernsey, both those that are in conformity with the laws and customs of Normandy, as well as other local customs that have been approved of.

The said Jurats shall judge all civil causes, persons as well as real property, and all matters and actions at law, and injuries against person or character—by imprisonment or fine not exceeding 60 *sols and a denier tournois* ; in so far as they are not crimes, for in such case the Jurats are charged to send the parties concerned and their witnesses bodily to Guernsey in custody of the Sheriff of Sark, and their cause to be dealt with by the Court of Guernsey. They (the said Jurats) shall keep and render a faithful record of that which shall be transacted before them. Everyone shall be at liberty to appeal to the Court of Guernsey from all sentences and judgments of the said Jurats which shall exceed the value of 10 *livres tournois* of personalty and in all cases concerning real property. In all bargains and contracts of estates passed and concluded before the Jurats, the minutes signed with the signature of the Jurats shall be received and approved authentic under the seal of the Bailiff of Guernsey, at all times, and whenever the parties shall so require.

The Prévôt shall suffice to plead the Queen's causes ;

as Procureur, to arrest person and goods as Sheriff; to serve all kinds of summonses (*ajours*) and distraints as a Sergeant; and to receive and collect the fines and perquisites of the Court, customs, anchorage, and all other things due to Her Majesty; of all which he shall render account to Her Majesty's Receiver in Guernsey.

On November 2nd, 1597, the Court of Guernsey, at the request of the Crown Officers of Sark, decreed the establishment of a prison in that Island, at the cost of the inhabitants; as likewise a jailer, also at the cost of the Island, and that each prisoner for his maintenance should pay the jailer the same sum as is paid in Guernsey.

The establishment of Jurats lasted nearly eighty years from 1594 to 1675. Why it came to an end we ascertain only from the statement contained in a Patent of Charles II which sets forth.

That the Jurats having refused to take the oaths, and subscribe the declaration, and receive the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, as directed by law . . . the Court of Guernsey having taken from them the civil authority; and whereas the rest of the inhabitants of Sark are poor and illiterate, or so averse to the laws of the Church of England as to be incapable of becoming Magistrates of the said Island. The King orders and directs the Court of Guernsey to give oath to *a Sénéchal*, and establish such other officers, Sheriff and Registrar, as shall be requisite for the administration of civil justice, and who shall be named by the said Philip de Carteret.

The grant of this Patent to Sir Philip, whereby he became entitled to name a Seneschal, Sheriff,

and Registrar, is not the only sign of the favour in which he stood with his King. This monarch, the second Charles, has always been accused, on too good grounds we fear, of basely forgetting those who had befriended him in adversity. After the disastrous battle of Naseby, so ruinous to his father's cause, he, as Prince of Wales, was removed for safety to the West of England. But before the steady advance of the Parliamentarians, the young prince with his suite was obliged to flee first to Cornwall, thence to the Scilly Islands, and lastly to Jersey. There he spent three months of the year 1646—and during the whole of that period, as well as on a second visit in 1649, after his father's cruel death, the De Carterets of St. Ouen and of Sark, devoted themselves to his service. The *History of Charles II in the Channel Islands*, by Dr. Hoskyns, who quotes Chevalier—a sort of Jersey Pepys—gives a minute and interesting account of this almost unknown chapter of the early life of the "Merrie Monarch." Not merely did the De Carterets remain faithful to the Prince during his stay in Jersey, even providing the chief part of the funds required for his household expenditure—but for years they continued to sacrifice their fortunes, and, at last, in the case of Sir Philip, even life itself, in his interests whilst provisioning and maintaining the fortress of Elizabeth Castle for the Crown.

It was to the successor of the above-named Sir

Philip in the Seignory of Sark that the King, after his restoration, granted another Patent to enable the Seigneur to build, if he chose, a pier at the northern end of Sark, called "L'Eperquerie," and to levy such dues on the shipping that might frequent it, as are raised by the Bailiff and Jurats on ships using the harbour of St. Peter-Port.

No doubt these Patents cost the King nothing, but they were probably eagerly sought for by the De Carterets as a means of increasing the importance of their Seigniory at Sark, and of thereby strengthening their position, as Seigneurs of St. Ouen, in their rivalry with the Seigneurs of Rozel and other noble fiefs in Jersey.

During the long period of the rebellion, Sark was garrisoned and held for the Parliament by the powerful anti-monarchist party, that, for reasons too long to be detailed here, obtained the upper hand in Guernsey.

At length in May, 1660, Charles II was proclaimed in the latter island amidst great rejoicings. On May 15th of the following year, an Act was passed by the Royal Court in obedience to His Majesty's command, on the advice of his Privy Council, to order the names of Oliver and Richard Cromwell, and those of the Island authorities who had taken part with them, to be struck out of the public Registers ; cancelling and annulling all contracts drawn up since the death of "His Sacred Majesty Charles I," unless they were

re-executed within a period of twelve months following, in conformity with the above royal command.

Church of Sark

Evidence is not wanting in the *Chronicles of Jersey*, and in other documents, that the colonists brought to Sark by the Seigneur of St. Ouen were all members of the Reformed Church ; the Reformation had been introduced into Jersey sometime previous to their migration. The Seigneur of St. Ouen was a zealous Reformer, and it is most probable that he selected such persons only as were attached to his own religious views. No trace exists in the rare documents of this period that there was any amongst the colonists who rejected the ministrations of the Protestant pastor. No division, no religious difficulty is to be found amongst the people. Apparently they were all submissive to the rules their Seigneur had established. It is probable that the colony of Sark was no sooner organized than the Seigneur of St. Ouen perceived the necessity which devolved upon him of providing a pastor for the ministration of a population already numbering over 200 souls.

In the height of the religious fever which followed the introduction of the Reformation the people would most likely have taken a dislike to the little Island as a place cut off from all means of grace—where neither marriages nor baptisms

could be celebrated, and where Sabbath after Sabbath passed by without public worship. It was incumbent, therefore, on the Seigneur of Sark to provide for the spiritual wants of his colonists, lest they should conceive a dislike for the Island, and, growing weary of it, abandon it altogether ; or where, if they elected to remain, they might yield to evil influences, become corrupt and a source of trouble and distress to the Seigneur. He, therefore, lost no time in securing the services of a French pastor, M. Cosmé Brévint, native of Angouville ; an excellent man, devoted to his ministry, who had fled from persecution about the year 1570-71.

A synod was held in Sark in the course of this year, probably for the installation of M. Brévint, for the constitution of the Church, and for the nomination of a consistory according to the forms adopted by the Reformed Church.

Let it be observed that the Minister of Sark was nominated, established, and entirely maintained by the Seigneur of Sark : it is nowhere seen that the inhabitants contributed in any way to their pastor's salary ; and thus it continues to be to this day. It is still the Seigneur of Sark alone who furnishes and pays the whole salary of the Vicar. The Vicar receives nothing whatever from the tithes. The Seigneur likewise provides and keeps in repair a residence for the clergyman, namely, the ancient Manor House, with a garden. Most of the inhabitants imagine that the tithes

they pay constitute a provision for the clergyman ; but they are mistaken. These tithes are in reality a seigniorial right reserved to the Seigneur by his Patent, and come under the same category with all the other rents due to him by the farmers.

At the commencement of the Reformation in the churches of the Channel Islands, they had adopted the Presbyterian form and discipline. Synods and colloquies were regularly held in one or other of the islands. Sark had its turn like the rest, and the Ministers of Sark assisted at those which were held in the other islands.

During the period that the Seigneurs of St. Ouen were Seigneurs of Sark, they selected and appointed the minister and provided his salary. He was designated as the Chaplain of the Seigneur; it therefore depended on the latter to retain or remove him at pleasure unless there had been any other special arrangement between them.

We here produce in an abridged form one of these agreements :

Agreement made on July 2nd, 1610-11, between Sir Philip de Carteret, Seigneur of Sark, and Mr. Elias Brévint.

The said Brévint promises and engages to perform the duties of the sacred ministry of Sark for his lifetime—as long as he shall be found efficient. The said Sir Philip promises to maintain the said Brevint for one year at the University of Saumur, in France, giving him 200 livres tournois for his expenses at that place. If it is found requisite that he should remain there longer, Sir Philip

engages to furnish him with the adequate means for so doing. And when he shall be installed Minister of Sark, he engages to give him eighty crowns (sixty sous per crown); five quarters of wheat, and five of barley, payable at Michaelmas—save that for the first year he promises to advance him one quarter upon his entry into office, with the sum of twenty crowns fifteen days after his installation, to be deducted from his stipend for the first year. He promises to build the pastor a house thirty feet clear inside, by eighteen feet wide, suitably partitioned, etc., with ground adjoining for a garden and for the sustenance of two cows; allowing him two crowns meanwhile because he will not have the enjoyment of the land until the following Michaelmas. He gives him a room at the Manor until such time as his house shall be built. He grants him in addition the tithes of fish, wool, and lambs, due to the Seigneur by the inhabitants of Sark.

Here follows the grant of the Church to Mr. Brévint:

I, the undersigned, Philip de Carteret, Esq., Seigneur of St. Ouen and of Sark, certify that as Patron of the Church and Benefice of Sark, I have given, and hereby do give to Master Elias Brévint, formerly student at the University of Saumur, the presentation of the said Church and benefice, which is now vacant, and besides this I name and appoint Mr. Brévint to serve and discharge the duties of the said Church; requesting the Clergy of Guernsey to take order concerning the nomination of the said Brévint to the ministry and service of the said Church

PHILIP DE CARTERET.

December 26th, 1611.

It would appear that the position of the Minister

of Sark remained the same under the Seigneurs of the Le Pelley family.

Notwithstanding, when Madam Susanne Le Gros, widow of Mr. Nicholas Le Pelley, bought the Seigneurie of Sark, from the then Bishop of Gloucester, in 1730, she, or her son Nicholas, addressed the said Bishop praying him to find a minister for the island. But this incident did not affect the position ; the Seigneur continued to nominate and appoint the Pastor at his own good-will and pleasure. With only three or four exceptions, all who have filled the office of Minister of Sark, including the present Vicar, have come from France or Switzerland ; have received their education at continental Universities or Colleges, and have been first consecrated to the ministry according to Presbyterian forms. How many sought Orders from the Bishop of the Diocese, previous to the date given below, we are unable to state. Once settled at Sark they conformed in greater or less degree to the rites of the Church of England. It is not certain whether the Seigneur of Sark procured a Licence from the Bishop of the Diocese. He did not do so, at any rate, in the case of several of these appointments. It is not precisely known when these Licences became absolutely necessary. Mr. Peter Le Pelley supposed it to have been about the year 1756, since which time at least the presentees have always received episcopal ordination before being licensed.

The Seigneur of Sark, as Patron, now presents

the clergyman he has selected to the Bishop, engaging to pay him a certain salary named in the presentation. If the Bishop approves, he licenses him to perform the duties of the Curacy of Sark. Thus licensed, he became and was styled Perpetual Curate or Incumbent. These perpetual curacies have recently been raised to vicariats. It can only be by sentence of the Ecclesiastical Court that the Vicar of Sark can be suspended, or deprived, of his appointment. And although the Vicar's salary comes from the good-will of the Seigneur, he may not withhold it, save by sentence of the Ecclesiastical Court.

For many years the Church of Sark was Presbyterian : and it was only after great difficulties and delays that it conformed to the Established Church of England.

It is not precisely known where the assemblies for Divine worship met during those early years when the number of the population was not great, and it is almost certain that there was no building set apart for this purpose. All places were found alike proper and convenient in these early days of Presbyterianism. In latter times the Seigneur gave a place forming part of the building attached to the Manor farm for the holding of assemblies for Divine worship. It was a small house, like a barn or shed, without chimney, or ceiling ; the thatch was the only roof. There was scarcely any light within it ; the Seigneur's was the only pew enclosed.

It was in this place of worship that the Court used to meet ; and there also the Chief Pleas, the parochial assemblies, and the school were held. Since the construction of the new church this old building has been converted into a dwelling-house. The public school is a plain but solid granite building, wherein are now held the meetings of the Court, the Chief Pleas, and the parish.

The church, built in 1820, is due to the good care of the Messrs. Le Pelley, father and son, both of them Seigneurs of Sark. They obtained a grant of £400 from the English Society for Building Churches on condition that half the sittings should be free. The Seigneur gave the land and a grant of money ; and the remaining half of the sittings were divided into closed pews containing three, four, or five sittings ; which were sold to those who wished to have a closed pew ; and the pew was thus attached to the proprietor's farm, to form part thereof, so that it should descend with the farm, and cannot be separated nor sold away from it. A repair rate of fivepence is annually raised on each sitting for the repair and maintenance of the church.

If the amount thus raised proves insufficient, the proprietors tax themselves in proportion to the number of their sittings, to meet the expenses. To the ordinary rate the Seigneur's contribution was fixed at £1, and the Seigneur bound himself to pay half these extraordinary expenses. Accord-

ing to the contract for building the church the Seigneur is the sole churchwarden.

This church was built in 1820, and consecrated in 1829 by the Bishop of Winchester.

Dr. Fisher, Bishop of Salisbury, came to Sark in 1818 to administer the rite of Confirmation ; he was the first Bishop who had visited the Island since the Reformation.

It would appear from some letters we have seen written by General Bayley, Lieutenant-Governor of Guernsey, dated in the year 1818, that it was he who suggested to the Dean of Guernsey the propriety of having a more decent and fitting place of worship than that which was then in use, which he calls " an old rotten barn." He offered a gift of £25 towards the building a better church.

The Seigneur and the purchasers of the closed pews that were to be constructed made up a sum of £449, and the Church Building Society contributed £400 on condition of their being 168 free seats provided. The church cost a little over £1,000.

The foundation stone was laid in the presence of the Dean of Guernsey, by Mr. Peter Le Pelley, in the absence of his father. The church was licensed for Divine service in 1821, by the Bishop of Winchester, who consecrated it in 1829.

In consequence of the isolation of Sark, the church remained closed whenever the clergyman was ill. Besides this, the church was shut up on

several occasions, and for considerable periods, owing to the difficulty of finding a clergyman for it. Sark was unknown or was looked upon as a place of banishment. The language being French also added to the difficulty. The church remained closed all through the year 1820-21. The Seigneur at that time—Mr. Peter Le Pelley —was compelled to go to Switzerland to seek a minister for Sark, and found much difficulty in engaging one, who after all remained but six years on the Island.

It is tolerably certain that when once Sark was peopled and public order well established (which was effected during the latter part of the life of Hélier de Carteret, who died in 1582-3: and during the residence of his son and successor Philip), the Island was seldom visited by the De Carterets, throughout the time that they were its Seigneurs, up to 1720. There are very few documents, and these contain scarcely any details. There is no written chronicle of the events which took place in Sark; they probably were not of sufficient consequence to have been committed to writing.

Falle's *Chronicles of Jersey* show how fully occupied and mixed up with all the public affairs of Jersey the De Carterets were; particularly during the Civil War. The Seigneurs of Sark resided permanently in Jersey, where their presence was necessary, and seldom found time to visit their Seignory. A Deputy or Procureur

who, as the case might be, was sometimes a stranger to the Island, sometimes one of its principal inhabitants—and once even the Chaplain—was therefore appointed to watch over the interests of the Seigneur, and the police of the Island. We do not know how things went on in these early times. We only know that there was life, stir, and activity. The farmers managed their land with a diligence and care imposed on them by the necessity of providing for the payment of their rents and dues. It may easily be imagined that after having met these dues, and stored away what was necessary for their maintenance, there could not have been much left for exportation: and had there been, this exportation was prohibited by the following Ordinance, dated October 24th, 1676 :

It is expressly forbidden to all persons to transport any corn out of this island, under penalty of sixty sols tournois fine.

As they kept a great many sheep they had wool which they prepared and carded themselves. One of the houses of the Island still bears the name Pinnerie (*Peignerie*), where they were wont to comb or card the wool, flax and hemp cultivated in the Island. Herewith they made stockings and frocks or shirts for their own use, and for exportation, which brought them a little money. They were also much engaged in catching the fish which abound on all sides of the Island. The

fishing was necessary for the maintenance of their families and for exportation ; it brought in also sufficient money for the purchase of those necessary articles which their farms did not produce. Thus they became good sailors, good and courageous pilots, and they preserve their reputation as such to the present day.

They had not at that time become involved with the troubles and affairs of the neighbouring islands ; these affected them but little or indirectly, in consequence of their isolated position. They were, however, neither abandoned nor forsaken, as may be seen by sundry documents and events which we proceed to mention.

Since the above date the Island has undergone a complete change.

The war which broke out between Charles I and the Parliament, affected Sark very materially in many ways. Guernsey ranged itself on the side of Cromwell and the Parliament, and as Sark was under the Jurisdiction of Guernsey, and under the supreme command of its Lieutenant-Governor, it was obliged to submit to the Parliamentary rule. Jersey held its allegiance to the King ; and all the De Carterets of St. Ouen, including the Seigneur of Sark, were ardent Royalists. Thus it followed that, whilst the Prince whom he so faithfully served was shut out of his kingdom, the Island became hermetically sealed to its Seigneur. He lost all his authority therein, all his rights, and all his revenues. The Island found itself wholly

in the power of the Lieutenant-Governor and Court of Guernsey.

The De Carterets made an attempt from Jersey to regain possession of the Island and the seigniorial revenues. The account of this expedition is given in a most graphic manner by Dr. S. Elliott Hoskins in his *Charles II in the Channel Islands*, vol. I, page 204. We venture to extract it verbatim.

Although Captain Carteret had fortunately succeeded in averting so dire a calamity as that of famine, his financial difficulties were by no means at an end. Determined to leave no stone unturned for raising money, to meet the daily increasing expenditure of his Government, he turned his attention to the neighbouring islet of Sark, with the view of endeavouring to take it from the Guernsey Parliamentarians, who enjoyed the revenues due to its Seigneur, Colonel Carteret.

Having associated Colonel Carteret and some others in the enterprise, four shallops were equipped, one of twelve oars (a new pinnace belonging to Monsieur de la Trinité), and a smaller vessel. The crew of the former consisted of forty picked men, under the immediate direction of Capt. Lane, who was commander-in-chief of the expedition, having Captain Chamberlain as second in command in the other pinnace, with an indifferent crew of thirty-two men. Two smaller craft accompanied the expedition. This little squadron, the men all well armed, left Jersey on the evening of May 25th, intending when they reached Sark to hold a council, and make final arrangements for landing. The night, however, being cloudy and the weather boisterous, the boats lost sight of each other, and the two divisions parted company ; Chamber-

lain was driven to a different quarter from that previously agreed upon, so that Lane's boats alone arrived at the place of rendezvous. Whilst lying on their oars, anxiously expecting their comrades, they were descried, and challenged by a look-out on the shore, "*Qui va là ?*" shouted one of the sentry; "*d'où vient le bat ?*" vociferated another; "*de Guernsey*," replied the crafty Captain Lane; this appearing doubtful, the third sentinel discharged his harquebus in the direction of the voices, and the brave army took to their heels.

Lane, apprehensive that the Islanders would take alarm and assemble to oppose his landing; deeming it probable likewise that Chamberlain had either perished or lost courage and so put back, yielded to the solicitations of some of his crew, who not being mariners were disheartened, perhaps sea-sick, and ordered his rowers to betake themselves to their oars. There were others, however, more daring, who still urged him to land, but he would not listen to them, and so pulled back to Jersey, where not finding Capt. Chamberlain he gave out that the other boats were wrecked.

Chamberlain, however, had not perished, and although unable to reach the rendezvous, he had managed to attain another part of the coast. Being a man of courage and resolution, and giving his commander credit for possessing similar qualities, he imagined him to have already landed, and hastened to support him. With a force much inferior in point of numbers to Lane's, he disembarked without hesitation; surprised and overpowered the first guard he came to; then, advancing into the interior, his men surrounded the residence of the Island commandant, disturbed the slumbering functionary, and made him prisoner without resistance. After this exploit, they proceeded from house to house disarming the inhabitants, and before

morning succeeded in rendering themselves masters of the greater part of the Island. Having captured some few pieces of ordnance and a quantity of ammunition, they suspended operations, under the full expectation that Lane's party had been equally diligent, that he would speedily join them, and so render their victory as complete as it was bloodless.

Daylight came, but no auxiliaries appearing Chamberlain and his thirty-two followers began to entertain less sanguine hopes of ultimate success. As their courage diminished, that of the Sarkese increased, especially when they beheld the handful of men who, favoured by darkness, had alarmed and overpowered them ; and when they discovered that there were no vessels in the offing ready to pour in reinforcements. Nevertheless, Chamberlain's small band kept them for some hours still in check ; not so, however, the women, who, being at large and making the best use of their liberty, fired the beacon as a signal to the Guernsey people of their being in distress. The signal remained unnoticed, and they waited in vain the arrival of succour until two o'clock in the afternoon, when some of the Sarkese contrived to elude their captors, loaded the cannon, which had not been captured by Chamberlain, and fired three rounds. The report of the guns attracting the attention of those on the opposite island, they promptly despatched some boats filled with armed men, who on landing surrounded and overpowered the small party of invaders. Chamberlain, finding himself beset by superior forces, both by sea and land, and unable to effect a retreat on board his pataches, surrendered in his turn without resistance.

His boats were taken, he was put in irons and removed with his companions-in-arms to Guernsey, where great rejoicings were indulged in ; the bells of the churches

rung, and cannon roared throughout the livelong night—a mighty demonstration, truly, for a victory over an army of two-and-thirty men, and a fleet consisting of a couple of fishing smacks.

To return to Lane, the same who fled from the Market-place in Sir Philip's time. The utmost indignation was manifested throughout Jersey, from the Governor to the meanest inhabitant, at his base and cowardly desertion of his colleague. The exercise of a little courage, it was felt, would not only have prevented the catastrophe, but have rendered the object of the expedition against Sark certain, for had he landed and pushed forward in a spirited manner, the opposition of three sentries would have been of little avail against a party, well trained to the use of arms, and experienced in military affairs. Stigmatized as a poltroon he was soon driven from Jersey to England where, on landing, he was apprehended as a malignant, but released on taking service with the rebels.

Now let us compare another account which we possess in MS. and evidently written on the very day on which this invasion occurred.

Account of the same invasion by Elie Brévint, Pastor of Sark, and residing there at the time :

The 27th May, which was a Monday in the year 1644, God delivered the island of Sark, from an attack, made by the Jersey people, by order of Capt. George De Carteret, and his cousin Mr. Philip, commonly called (during his father's life-time) the " Monsieur de Serk." The troops, headed by Mr. Chamberlain, consisted of about 60 men, and were embarked in 4 vessels ; two arrived at Dixcart. About 26 of the men walked up without encountering any opposition, and were then met, seized, disarmed and sent to Guernsey in the frigate of Captain Joseph

Bramsby. The others, driven back by the guard on the Eperquerie—namely, two frigates—and chased by the large Parliamentary frigate, made for Jersey. The two first were seized, secured, and carried off by the said large Parliamentary frigate. (This same day I read Ps. 108; and gave my daughter to read, Nehem. 6; to my son Elias, Ps. 121; and to Daniel, Judges 4.)

They were armed with swords, muskets, carabines, axes, and also provided with cords for binding and garotting those who attempted to escape, &c. It was small rope and not cord. In the two vessels at Dixcart there remained but 7 or 8 men. Nearly all who landed on the island were hungry, thirsty, wet in getting into the boats, and some were suffering from sea-sickness." [In a note he writes "Greyhound" (*un Levrier*). Why? because one of the frigates was named the Greyhound.]

"It is said that Mr. Chamberlain, in coming to Sark, was authorised and charged, by those who sent him, to transport to Jersey such of the Sarkese as surrendered themselves; to put to death all who offered resistence; and to send the women and children to France." [The following note is evidently suggested by what he saw of the weapons which the soldiers brought to the attack; these being new to him, he at once proceeds to describe them in his notebook as follows:—]

"The musketeers do not carry armour, helmet, corslet, &c., which would be burdensome and impede their walking with ease, and handling their weapons skilfully. The ball, both in cannon and musket rebounds, and the rebound has more force than the flight or first stroke. One must aim at the body or leg if one wishes to wound the enemy, and not at the head or high up, for fear of the ball escaping without hitting, for the larger the butt—as the body or chest—the more sure is one of striking; and

the nearer the enemy can be approached the better ; for the shot has little force if fired at a distance, but much if near : or what is called 'close quarters.' It is also a good thing if one can be the first to give the alarm, or first shot (called by the French, the first point) as that surprises, terrifies, and enfeebles the enemy, whether it be the stroke of ball, sword, fist, stick, &c."

[The following entry in the good "Pasteur's" note-book seems to be the record of what he saw before him on the taking of the prisoners.]

"To bind the arms of an enemy or prisoner, behind the back, or otherwise, two fathoms of small rope are sufficient, without any other cordage. When the vanquished sues for his life to the mercy of the victorious captain, he must throw or lay down his weapons, and must not come armed into the presence of the said captain.

"With 1 lb. of lead, which costs 2 or 3 sols, 10 or 12 musket bullets can be made, according to the size of the musket."

In consequence of this attempt of the Seigneur and his royalist friends to recover the Island for the King, and of the troubles caused by the Civil War, the States of Guernsey passed the following Act :

By order of Messrs. the Judge, Jurats, Minister, Constables and Douzainiers and others, forming the corporation of the States of this island, held the 25th November, 1644 ; his Excellency the Lieut.-Governor present.

It is ordained that the maintenance of the soldiers for the garrison of the Island of Sark shall be immediately provided by whatever means seem most advisable, by the advice of the Lieutenant-Governor, and the Officers of Justice, and of the State, having regard to the importance

of the safe-keeping of the said Island, and of its great consequence to this State.

At the States meeting held at Guernsey, 26th December, 1644, in presence of the Lieutenant-Governor.

Forasmuch as it is requisite to provide for the preservation of the Island of Sark, which is of incalculable importance to the well-being of the State, it has been ordained this day that an assembly shall be held every Monday in future, at twelve o'clock in the morning, to advise and give direction concerning the maintenance which is and shall be kept up in the said Island, and other public matters touching the present troubles, &c.

In 1651 when Jersey surrendered it was agreed "that it shall be left to the Parliament's good pleasure to allow the Seigneur of St. Ouen to compound for the Island of Sark." But it is probable that as the Seigneurs of St. Ouen continued to hold by the exiled King, the Seigneur of Sark would not enter into communication with a Parliament to which he was opposed, nor with Cromwell, all the time he was Protector ; for in 1659 "Captain Waterhouse, Lieutenant-Governor of Guernsey, bids his respected friend, Mr. John Le Gros, Judge of Sark Isle, take care of the Militia, and keep the said Isle for his Highness the Protector of England." In the declaration presented to Cromwell it is said "The Island of Sark has been twice lost [probably when taken by Eustace the Monk and Captain Carteret]. The Guernseymen recovered it, and during the civil wars have for a long time kept a garrison there, at

their own expense."—(F. Tupper's *History of Guernsey*.)

Charles II, having been restored to the throne, the tide of events also changed for the Seigneur of Sark. The same Captain Waterhouse, three months after the restoration in 1660, writes to a friend, "Seeing a frigate laying under Sark in a storm, the next morning I sent Somer in the shallop to see what they were. It proved to be the Governor of Jersey with Sir Phillippe; I have done him right into his possession of Sark, where his brother now is." Thus the De Carterets had their own again.

It must have been a great event for the Sarkese to have their Seigneur back again, who had always watched over their interests—both temporal and spiritual. How things went on at Sark under the direct Government of Guernsey is not known. There is every reason to suppose that the Island was very quiet during all the Civil War and the Protectorate; mention is made but of one perturbing event—the attack of 1644. The Sarkese did the best they could for themselves, and did very much as they pleased.

But the Seigneur's presence had become a matter of absolute necessity; for great disorders had been introduced into the Island during his long absence.

His first consideration was the condition of the Court of the Island. In consequence of the Act of Uniformity ordained by King Charles II it

was necessary that the Judge and Jurats should belong to the Established Church of England, and that they should be Communicants. Now, up to that time, they had been Presbyterians, and they would not conform to the Church of England. The Seigneur found himself in great perplexity. He saw that it was absolutely necessary to reform the Court of Sark, and to reconstruct it upon a different footing. To this effect he addressed the King, praying His Majesty to authorize him to establish a *Sénéchal*, seeing that it would be easier to find one man who would conform to the Established Church, than six. The King granted him in 1676, the Patent we have seen in the portion relating to the Jurisdiction of Sark. This matter was doubtless replete with most lively interest to the Sarkese. It may well be imagined that there were endless conversations, discussions, and conferences amongst them ; for as it was impossible to find qualified Jurats, the Island was without a Court of Justice. At this time, soon after the appointment of the *Sénéchal*, we see that in 1676, "upon the representation of His Majesty's Officers, that it would be necessary that the Residents and Tenants of this Island should be subject to keep watch, and bear arms in time of war, as well as the forty militiamen, the Court hereupon, after having heard the general opinion of the Island, has ordained that they shall be thus subject, and to this they have unanimously consented."

The subject of the tenements then occupied the Seigneur and gave him an infinity of trouble. Very soon after the allotment of their farms, the proprietors began dividing them, sharing them by sale or by inheritance, creating rents or mortgages upon them, as was the practice in Jersey.

Now, in the year 1611, the Seigneur of Sark had obtained a Patent from King James I, absolutely prohibiting the dismemberment of the farms, but that Patent did not long arrest the evil, which had again sprung up and acquired some magnitude during the long and forced absence of the Seigneur. From the moment of his return to the Island he set himself seriously to work, not only to stop this evil, but to repair the mischief it had caused. The following is an abstract of the Patent alluded to :

PATENT OF JAMES THE IST, IN 1611, ORDERING THAT THE TENEMENTS OF SARK BE NOT DISMEMBERED OR PARTED BETWEEN CO-HEIRS, NOR ENCUMBERED WITH NEW RENTS.

It appears that because the possession of the ancient tenements of the isles adjacent have been, and yet continue partable amongst all the sons and daughters together, the inhabitants of Serk (though in several proportions) have an affection to that form of descent, and would bring the said lands, so lately purchased, to the like descent, which is both against the law, and also to the great damage of the Island of Serk ; and in process of time, by other partitions, and extraordinary charges laid upon the said lands, there would remain only a number of poor men unable to defend the Island.

Know ye . . . that we have willed, ordained, and appointed . . . that no lands, or tenements situate lying or being within the said Island of Serk, or any part thereof, shall or ought to be partable or parted among any sons, or among the sons and daughters together by force or reason of any descent of inheritance . . . but that all lands, tenements and hereditaments lying or being within the said Isle of Serk, ought and shall from time to time descend and come whole and entirely to the eldest son, and the heirs of the son.

And further . . . that all and every tenant, owner, farmer, occupier of any land, tenement, or hereditament, in Serk, for the time being, shall forbear, and utterly cease to raise, sell or impose upon any his or their said lands any other charge, payment or incumbrance, than such . . . as they are bound to perform by their tenures . . . to the Seigneur of the Isle, or otherwise, for the defence or preservation of the same.

And for the more safety of Serk and settling of loyal, obedient subjects therein (being a place of importance and subject to danger) we do ordain that no stranger born out of the Island shall at any time be suffered to dwell, inhabit, remain, or make any long abode within the said Serk, unless every such stranger . . . take the oath of allegiance to us . . . and unless the licence of the Seigneurs of Serk, within the time of six weeks, be procured and obtained in their behalf, and we charge and command that none of the inhabitants of Serk, receive at any time, into his or their houses, any strangers . . . either as servants, undertenants . . . but only such as shall take the oath of allegiance, and procure the licence of the Lord of Serk. And we do grant that it shall be lawful for all the inhabitants of Serk to bargain, sell, convey, let, lease, demyse, or assign, sealed with the seal granted to H. de Carteret . . .

any lands tenements or hereditaments, parcels for such estate and during such terms as the tenants, farmers, and occupiers heretofore have used. . . .

Dismembered Tenements

Notwithstanding the express terms of James I's Patent, we find that Sir Philip de Carteret, Seigneur of Sark, had to present a request to the Court of Guernsey, in 1677, on the subject of the dismemberment of certain tenements in Serk, which had taken place during the Civil War, and in the Seigneur's absence ; praying that a commission of enquiry might be named. This the Court granted, and sent three Jurats to examine into the state of things. They found that Sir P. de Carteret's statement was correct, and they drew up their report.

We learn from a contract dated 1691, that Sir Philip de Carteret let the Seigneurie of Sark with all the revenues to Mr. Daniel Valpy, called Janvrin, for three years. There is a singular clause in this contract, empowering the said Janvrin " to come and go to and from the Island of Sark, whenever he thought proper, without interference or question from any of the inhabitants, any more than if it had been himself (Sir Philip) in person."

It would seem from this that Mr. Janvrin was not always a resident in Sark, and that they were very particular about the admission of strangers into it.

This lease must have brought some variety to the monotony of Sark. Sir Philip de Carteret died before it ran out, in 1694. His son Charles being a minor, the widow claimed her dowry upon Sark. This son died early in 1715. By his will he took measures for the sale of Sark, to provide for the payment of his debts, as mentioned elsewhere.

The sale took place soon after his death, when the Island was sold to Mr. Milner, who was succeeded by his niece, wife of Bishop Wilcox of Gloucester, who, in 1730, disposed of it to Madame Susan Le Gros, daughter of Mr. John Le Gros, one of the rich men and notables of Sark, and widow of Mr. Nicholas Le Pelley, was the purchaser. This Seignory remained in the Le Pelley family until 1852. It may easily be imagined how much excitement and gossip these changes, these deaths, this sale, gave rise to, amongst the public of Sark. For all these events interested them personally, and were of vital importance to them. They had had little or no personal contact with their three last Seigneurs, and the then new purchaser of the Island might also happen to be a stranger, who would reside with them as little as his predecessor had done. We have no means of knowing what they said and thought when they heard that a native of Sark, a true Sarkese, Madame Le Pelley *née* Le Gros, was their Seigneur, the Lady of Sark. They must have been overjoyed at the prospect ;

and yet perhaps on the other hand, it was here as elsewhere "a prophet hath no honour in his own country." Jealousy is a noisome weed that groweth quickly. However this may be, a great change took place throughout the Island after the Seigneurie had passed into the Le Pelley family. From that time the Seigneur permanently resided in the Island, or as in later times, came to live there for five or six months every summer, with his family.

Mr. Nicholas Le Pelley, eldest son of Madame Le Pelley *née* Le Gros, who was her successor in the Seigneurie, rebuilt his houses—the Perronnierie—in a manner suited to the residence of the Seigneur of Sark. His grandfather Le Gros had been one of the largest tenants of the Island. His example was soon followed, and many houses were rebuilt about that time according to the means of the proprietors, with a better exterior and more comfortable interior arrangements than before. In this way several houses were erected, the advantages of which were speedily appreciated. The Le Pelleys were of Guernsey origin; they occupied a good position there, and as they spent several months of every year in Guernsey, the relations of Sark with Guernsey became more intimate, more frequent, and more valuable to the Island. The Seigneur had his tenants' interests at heart, and exerted himself most energetically for their benefit which was identical with his own—their prosperity was one with his.

The long continued stay of the Seigneur in Sark induced several Guernsey families of good means to come to Sark for the summer.

The Sarkese saw that it would be to their advantage to let their houses to these visitors ; they therefore put them in order, and made them as attractive to visitors as their means allowed. Thus it came about that a family would remain in Sark for several weeks, sometimes for several months. When the season was propitious all the lodgings were occupied.

In this way a good many years passed by ; and frequent contact with strangers, almost all of them gentle people, served to tame and to civilize the inhabitants of Sark a little ; and to put them into communication with the outer world. During the summer, from June to October, several good boats, and later two or three cutters traded between Sark and Guernsey several times a week, for the convenience of visitors. These frequent opportunities of transit induced the Sarkese to cross the water, to see the town and island of Guernsey, which extended the circle of their ideas. At this date there was no hotel in Sark, nor any place where a visitor could put up. There was no shop in the island, no grocer, baker, nor butcher. Everything had to be brought over from Guernsey. The farmers only grew vegetables for their own use ; there was no market for vegetables, fruit, etc. Nothing was grown for the Guernsey market, as it was too far off, and the

opportunities of supply too uncertain and expensive. The farmers only took over their corn, sheep, and fat cattle, and in later times, their potatoes. Notwithstanding these drawbacks, families continued to come to Sark and to spend there halcyon days, in the enjoyment of perfect freedom and peace, far from the noise and disturbance of a town. Visitors came from Guernsey, rarely from Jersey, never from England.

Here we pause to take a short review of the past, and to look at it from another point of view ; before entering upon the description of the great changes which have taken place in the Island of late years.

We have said a few words respecting the ordinary life of the Sarkese during the Seignory of the De Carterets. They were almost left to themselves. It was incumbent upon them to work hard in order to support themselves. But great monotony must have reigned throughout the Island.

The clergymen were more or less educated men, but their libraries were most probably not voluminous and there were then no daily papers to keep them informed of the events of the day, and to take them out of their little routine. They were scarcely better lodged or furnished than the greater part of the inhabitants. Their salary hardly sufficed for their daily wants. They were necessarily half farmers, and in an almost entirely agricultural parish, the pastor has but little com-

munication with his parishioners, except during times of sickness.

There was no regular school, none attended but those who wished, and could afford to pay for learning. They had little inducement to learn to read, write or cipher without mentioning higher studies. Books were at that time very rare and costly, and so was paper. All this was discouraging. The style of life was of great simplicity. This state of things continued up to the end of the eighteenth century and the beginning of nineteenth. In those times the manner of life of the upper classes of Guernsey, and consequently of the family of the Seigneurs of Sark, was certainly not what we find it soon after the Peace of 1815. The ministers of Sark, during the greater part of the Seigneurie of the Messieurs Le Pelley, were little superior to their predecessors. We know that several of them were far inferior to them, and that they conducted themselves in a manner which would certainly not be tolerated at the present day. But at that period there was little religious life properly so called, anywhere to be found. There was outward observance and form, but there was no reality or force of religious conviction. The public houses were open the whole of Sunday except during the hours of divine service. There they danced, played cards and other games. Labour went on just the same on Sunday, or part of Sunday as it did on week days, the Seigneur himself set the example, and

his case was so outrageous, that one of the constables was obliged to give him a severe reprimand for his conduct in this particular. Mr. de Joux, Chaplain, from 1821-1826, had sufficient influence with the Chief Pleas to get an ordinance passed, ordering the closing of public houses all day on Sunday, and prohibiting the sale of all intoxicating liquors on that day. On a later occasion, a Sarkese, Le Sieur Elie Guille, proposed, at a meeting of the same legislative body, that an ordinance should be passed prohibiting all field-work, and all work that was not imperatively necessary on Sunday. This was carried by a large majority, so that Sundays in Sark are now perfectly quiet.

The long war which raged between France and England and lasted at least twenty years, was felt at Sark in many ways. It was known that the French coveted the Channel Islands, and they made several attempts to surprise them. The Sarkese had to make the best provision they could against this emergency. The militia was kept in good form, and made as effective as possible.

Three or four watchhouses were built, and every night a certain number of men were told off to keep guard by rotation. Three or four great stacks of fuel were kept ready to be fired in case of danger. This lasted all the time of the war. But the Sarkese were not first-class sentinels.

When wind and tide were against the probability of a landing of ships in Sark, they laid

them down, and went quietly to sleep in their watch-houses. One night, however, a French boat belonging to a man named Hochet, came ashore at Little Sark, the crew finding the watch sound asleep, were at first inclined to kill them, but contented themselves instead with loading their boat with sheep, which probably belonged to the Seigneur, who had a large flock in the neighbourhood.

Another day a large boat was observed coming across which landed near L'Eperquerie. Three or four Sarkese came down to see where the boat was from and why she had come ; the crew asked them to come on board. They did so at once, when the boat set sail immediately, the Sarkese were taken to France and imprisoned at Valognes, where they remained a long time.

Government ordered the erection of a telegraph of the kind then in vogue. It was placed on an elevated spot. The house still exists which was built for the officer in charge. This station served for communication between Guernsey, Jersey, and Alderney. Three or four Sarkese alternately watched the signals. This telegraph was removed after the peace of 1815, and the officer committed suicide. During the way the temporal prosperity of the Sarkese went on increasing. Agricultural produce of all kinds was dear, and sold well.

There was always a squadron in Guernsey roads, amongst which the Sarkese easily found

sale for their produce, and for their fish. A few enterprising Sarkese trafficked even so far as Jersey and France ; and then perceived that they might put their farms to better profit, particularly by growing potatoes for exportation to England in their own boats. Several of them took to oyster dredging and made much money by this, as well as by their mackerel fishery, crab-pots, lobsters, etc. Thus there was great industry amongst the Sarkese, and they lived at ease and were prosperous. There was no actual poverty in the Island. It is not surprising the value of land increased, and even doubled in this half century.

We resume the thread of our history by the mention of an event, which produced an immense sensation, and a great and permanent change in the Island.

One evening in September, 1834, two strangers came up to Mr. Le Pelley, Seigneur of Sark, and requested some private conversation with him. Next day the vicar learnt that their object had been to obtain his permission to work the mines of Sark.

Mr. Le Pelley had no faith in these mines, and endeavoured to discourage their design. But they maintained that that was their own business ; that they asked nothing of him except his permission to open them, promising him six per cent. upon whatever ore should be brought to the surface. He then told them that he would accompany them to Guernsey and would give

them the required permission, after having taken the opinion of a lawyer, and having secured himself from all liability and guarantee.

The question respecting the minerals of Sark, had already been raised in 1609 and 1612. And in later times serious quarrels had occurred between one of the Seigneurs Le Pelley and a tenant, in whose lands copper was reported to have been found.

Nothing however had been done to establish the fact, and the matter had been allowed to drop, or was forgotten.

When the working of the mines was commenced, an adit was opened on this spot, and a few specimens of coppers were discovered, but nothing to repay the labour.

After having obtained permission from the Seigneur of Sark, and having formed a Company, for the working of certain metallic veins in the Island of Sark, Mr. Hunt brought over a band of Cornish miners, in 1835, who at once began to pierce adits at Le Pot ; that spot giving good indications of the presence of copper. Much labour was spent upon it : good indications were constantly turning up, but no paying metal. In despair Mr. Hunt most carefully examined all the cliffs at Little Sark, and discovered rich indications of a vein of silver and lead. He sent for a first-rate inspector of mines, who decided that the vein was rich and good, and promised well.

This restored life and energy to the captain and to the company ; a greater number of English miners were sent for, the Pot was abandoned, and so were the other veins, and the works at Port Gorey were pushed on with redoubled activity. An experienced captain was placed at the head of the concern ; a powerful steam pump was had over, and later a steam winch was added for clearing out the levels. An ore which was very rich in silver was then obtained, worth £600 the ton, but the quantity was small and the vein continued very narrow. They hoped to find some great mass of it which should pay more than the working expenses. A tea and coffee service of pure silver from the Sark mines was kept prominently before the Guernsey public ; the sight encouraged the shareholders and helped to urge forward the work. The mining population was then considerable ; it amounted to 250 souls, including women and children. Between 70 and 80 Sarkese were employed on the works, at first on the surface, afterwards in the levels, and they became miners. Nearly all the English miners were domiciled at Little Sark, which swarmed with people in the daytime, and presented an interesting sight of bustling activity.

The company spent a great deal and spared nothing ; but the ore brought to the surface contained too little metal ; the vein of silver grew narrower and narrower ; the expected mass of silver never turned up. Some of the shareholders

retired utterly ruined ; a small number held on, but at last it was necessary to abandon everything, and to sell the plant belonging to the company. This took place in 1844. It has been said, but this is not precisely ascertained, that the company's outlay amounted to £34,000, whilst its returns in ore were but £4,000. The mines abandoned, the miners away, Sark once again returned to its ancient tranquil monotony ; but the effect of this episode upon the minds of the Sarkese could never be obliterated.

These mining operations had made much sensation in Guernsey and Jersey, and even in more distant countries, that troops of visitors came to the Island in summer, to verify the marvellous fact with their own eyes. "That there were *mines* in Sark—but in *Sark !*—Can it be possible ?" They came, they saw for themselves the bustling hive across the narrow Coupée and went away to tell the wondrous story to others—but only to be disbelieved in their turn.

It was about this date that a steamer began to make a few excursions to Sark. Every time it came it was crowded with passengers. The Sark cutters came and went almost every day. Two or three hotels were set up, and also a few shops where articles of general utility might be purchased. This was a great convenience to everyone. Sark was greatly altered. Tranquillity, monotony, solitude—all these were now far away, even in

winter, in consequence of the works in full activity at the mines.

During this interval several circumstances occurred which were of great importance to the Island, and produced deep sensation therein, and which finally led to the state of things existing at the present day.

The author must be allowed the liberty of changing for the moment the form of his narrative.

He is about to speak of an event in which he took a part, and which happened beneath his own eyes. He hopes to be excused if he lingers a little while over that which relates to Mr. Peter Le Pelley, one of the Seigneurs of Sark, for the sake of the friendship which existed between himself and that gentleman. He desires to pay this tribute to the memory of his friend without in the slightest degree intending to depreciate his predecessors or his successors in the Seigneurie of the Island.

During the afternoon of February 27th, 1839, as I was occupied in pruning the fruit trees in my garden, Mr. Peter Le Pelley suddenly stood before me looking joyous and happy.

On this occasion he had come up to the Parsonage as soon as he arrived, to announce the fact, and to ask me to spend the evening with him : he meant to be only two or three days in the Island this time, and he wished that we should be together as much as possible for he had a thousand

things to tell me. Our conversations were almost always upon religious subjects.

Next morning at nine o'clock, I was at the Manor in order to accompany Mr. Le Pelley to the boat, as was my custom, when I had time ; I found him in good spirits quite happy, his face radiant. The sun was shining, and he was delighted that there was nothing to hinder his going to Guernsey for Sunday. But there was a strong south wind blowing ; wind enough for his servants to entreat their master, with tears in their eyes, not to go that day. Unfortunately nothing could stop Mr. Le Pelley when he had made a resolution, or formed a design. He was quite fearless on the water ; he said he had seven lives on the sea, and that he had gone across in much worse weather.

As soon as we came in sight of the sea on our way to the harbour of L'Eperquerie, where he was to embark, and he had marked the lines of white foam round Guernsey, the Ferrières and Herm, he suddenly turned pale, his head drooped, his voice changed, and this continued to the water's edge. He talked, but he seemed pre-occupied. Might he not have had some presentiment of what was soon to happen ? He pointed out to me a small boat which was sailing quietly in the Great Roussell, this appeared to encourage him to go across. Arrived at the beach, at the worst moment of the tide, we saw as it were a high wall of foaming water at the Pointe du Nez. He remarked to the

boatman, Abraham de Carteret, and his son, Abraham, aged about eighteen, that it was not a good moment for crossing ; but they told him that they could cross higher up where the tide was not so strong. That decided him to embark. Notwithstanding it seemed to me that if the boatmen had either refused to go, or had advised his waiting some hours later for the turn of the tide, he would have been glad of it. They had confessed before leaving their home that they were running a great risk, hoping at the same time that they would get over without accident. I still seem to see young Abraham de Carteret bright, laughing, without the slightest uneasiness ; his father on the contrary was serious and absent.

Thinking that they would probably wait till the tide had slackened, I made up my mind to take leave of Mr. Le Pelley. He held out his hand to me and said, " Good-bye," but without looking me in the face, and keeping his eyes fastened on the beach, as if he knew that I also blamed his imprudence. I hastened to ascend the cliff that I might follow the boat on her way. When half way up, I was amazed to see that the boat had already started, with its foresail up, going straight towards the Pointe du Nez where the tide made a high white wall of foam. The little boat we had seen from above was obliged to fly before the gale which had considerably increased. A schooner in the Great Roussell had a wide border of foam surrounding her. I trembled for

the boat and climbed higher up so as to see better how it would pass that wall of water. I met a man who had also been watching the course of the boat in astonishment that they could expose themselves in this manner.

At this moment the boat entered the tide and immediately rose up almost perpendicularly. An instant after we saw its keel shining in the sun, and a few seconds afterwards boat and all had totally disappeared in the waves, and nothing reappeared. I flew down to the beach to implore a man who was there to launch a boat to their rescue, for Mr. Le Pelley was a first-rate swimmer; but he refused, and it was right of him to have done so, for he would no doubt have perished with the others.

I then ran to the point to see if any one or anything was floating—but saw nothing. No swimmer could have held out against that boiling sea, the current running at five or six miles the hour, and Mr. Le Pelley was heavily clad. So all was lost. I was, as it were, beside myself, running hither and thither without knowing what I was about. I came upon Mr. Le Pelley's servant, a man already advanced in years, who was about to drown himself for the loss of his beloved master, and it was by main force that I kept him from flinging himself down the steep cliff, and compelled him to sit down by me until he had grown calmer, which was not till an hour had elapsed, and then I took him home.

After this I hastened to look for a large boat which would go to the scene of the disaster, to try to find something afloat. But the boats were all high and dry, and besides all thought the weather too bad to put out.

None of the bodies was ever recovered.

Soon after his arrival Mr. Ernest Le Pelley put up a monumental tablet to his brother's memory in the Sark Church, which was all the more appropriate as his body not having been recovered, there was no grave or other memorial of his death. The following is the inscription engraved on the Tablet :—

A la mémoire de Peter Le Pelley, Ecr., Seigneur de Serk, noyé près la Pointe du Nez, dans une tempête, le 1er mars, 1839, âge de 40 ans.

Son corps n'a pas été retrouvé, mais "La mer rendra ses morts," *Apoc.* xx. 13. Sa piété profonde et sincère, le bien qu'il a fait dans l'île et ailleurs, et son integrité et son amour de la justice comme magistrat et comme Seigneur de Serk, le font regretter vivement de sa famille, de ses tenans, et de ses amis.

Ce monument a été érigé par Ernest Le Pelley, Ecr., Seigneur de Serk, en témoignage d'affection pour un frère chéri.

At that time the mining operations in Sark were at their height. The mines were tolerably productive, and promised well for the future. Everything in Sark wore an air of prosperity, of activity, and cheerfulness. The summer visitors flocked there more than ever from far and near,

partly from curiosity, partly also on account of the beauty of the Island, which began to be appreciated as it deserved. The bustle and whirl of a town seemed to have been imported into Sark. This went on for several years, but unfortunately, as we have elsewhere remarked, the mines did not answer. The Seigneur of the Island had reckoned upon their producing a rich result, and he held a number of shares which brought nothing in, but on the contrary caused him a great deal of outlay. His situation became identical with that of the other shareholders, and perhaps worse, so that he was obliged to mortgage his Seigneurie for a large sum of money. His wife died, he was obliged to remove to Guernsey for the sake of his children's education, and his own death speedily followed.

Things wore a very sombre aspect. The mines were totally abandoned, the Seignory heavily burdened with debt ; a youth far away in the Indian Ocean was Seigneur ; the Island was passing through a painful crisis. After two or three years the new Seigneur obtained a licence from the Crown to sell the Seigneurie, which was bought by Mrs. T. G. Collings in 1852. She never visited her new acquisition, to the great regret of the Sark people. At her death a year afterwards, the Island came into the possession of her only son, the Rev. W. T. Collings, M.A., who was for many years the Seigneur of Sark.

Although visitors continued to come to Sark

as much as ever, there was down to the year 1854 as it were a pall over the place and the people. The Seigneurie had lost much of its old prestige, the Manor was no longer inhabited, no longer full of life, or else it was let to strangers and offered no more any attraction to visitors. The former Seigneur spent nothing on the Island, being always absent ; there was nothing to be had from the mines ; the small resources of the Island no longer sufficed for the wants of a population which had largely augmented since the mines were in operation. Little by little want crept in, poverty began to be felt. Some of the people expatriated themselves in order to find employment in the neighbouring islands. The oyster fishery had ceased : the other fisheries were not very productive. It was impossible not to feel serious anxiety as to the future.

The new Seigneur, Mr. Collings, from the very first took the greatest fancy to Sark and its inhabitants, and decided upon making it his permanent residence, or at least planned to live there the greatest part of the year ready to devote himself in every way to the welfare of his people.

Soon after Mr. Collings' arrival, the Guernsey and Jersey excursion steamers began coming regularly on fixed days two or three times a week during the summer. Larger hotels were opened ; the Sark houses were put in order for letting. The excursion boats often landed from 300 to 500 persons in a single day ; everybody wanted to see

the improvements at the Seigneurie, the gardens and grounds of which were thrown open to all : the short voyage on the water was a most tempting amusement ; and so it came to pass that crowds came over, and still continue to come year by year. In the fine summer days the townspeople were sure of a delightful ramble about the Island and pure bracing air to breathe. For some years the number of visitors has amounted to from 4,000 to 5,000 annually. Now that steamers abound Sark is well placed between Jersey, Guernsey, and Alderney for day excursionists. And the reputation of Sark for its picturesque beauty and purity of atmosphere has spread far and wide, and attracts new visitors year by year, whilst those who have paid one visit often return again. It may boast of having been honoured by the visits of many personages of distinction Amongst others the Duchess Dowager of St. Albans, with her daughter Lady Diana Beauclerk. made two sojourns in it for some months. Prince Louis Lucien Bonaparte was, as far as we know, the first Prince who visited Sark.

Hitherto no member of the Royal Family of England had put foot upon the Sark soil ; but as several high personages who stand near the Queen had visited the Island, and described to her its beauty and originality, it seemed therefore for a time likely that her Majesty would possibly visit Sark in passing through the Channel, especially as the Admiralty had sent a steamer, the

Osborne, to look out for a safe anchorage and a convenient landing place ; unfortunately on that day the weather became unfavourable, and the sea very rough, and fearing lest it was always so, they concluded it would both be difficult and uncomfortable for the Queen to land. However, when visiting Jersey in 1859, she passed quite close to Sark, and coasted all along the east side, it was then supposed in the Island that she meant to disembark, but it proved otherwise, for she continued slowly to steam away *en route* for Jersey. Again on her return from thence (on a Sunday) she coasted along the south-west side. During these two passages, the Seigneur of Sark ordered a salute to be fired in honour of the Queen, which no doubt she distinctly heard.

As a detailed account has been given of the fatal accident which happened to Mr. P. Le Pelley, Seigneur of Sark, it will not be out of place to relate a similar misadventure which befel another Seigneur of Sark the Rev. W. T. Collings, and his family, on November 28th, 1872, but out of which they escaped in an almost miraculous manner.

The Seigneur of the Island usually returns to spend the winter in Guernsey, and Mr. Collings always charters a steamer for the occasion. That autumn the weather had been stormy for a long time, in consequence of which, and also owing to other engagements, the steamer *Princess* had been unable to cross. But one morning, as the

weather had considerably improved, the steam-tug *Gosforth* was sent over to fetch the family, and arrived at Sark about the middle of the day.

The following is extracted from the account which Mr. Collings wrote of their shipwreck and deliverance :

I feel urged to give a detailed account of the accident which occurred to the *Gosforth* steam-tug on Thursday last, November 28th. I trust and believe that I am solely actuated by the desire to declare the wonders which God in His mercy hath wrought for all of us in our extreme peril. It is a marvel to all seamen that we, ten in number, could live for nearly two hours, in such a sea, in a boat only 11 ft. 6 in. in length.

The steamer's arrival having been quite unexpected much time was of course lost in packing up and other preparations, so that it was late in the afternoon before we got on board. Before we actually had the anchor up it was four o'clock. The sea was heavy in the Great Russell, and our captain wished to spare us a long and rough passage round the Southern Heads. No doubt that would have been the most prudent course to take, because she would thus have given a wide berth to the reef of the Ferrière Rocks, and in the open channel, there was plenty of twilight to guide him until the pier-lights and the whole length of the brilliantly illuminated Esplanades and town would stand out of the gathering darkness. Shall I now add to this narrative the record of my private thoughts ? If I do so, it is with but one object, that of giving God the glory and of encouraging others to trust in Him and to be ever constant in prayer at all times, even when they think themselves most safe.

We were approaching Herm and in comparatively

smooth water. I had not the remotest idea of danger. Our captain was in the habit of going through this channel many times a week in summer and once at least at ten at night. Still I was led to offer up a silent prayer for the dear ones with me, for my servants, for the sailors in the ship, for all who were journeying by sea or by land, for the sick and aged whom I had left in Sark.

This continued for about twenty minutes, when I was interrupted by perceiving to my great surprise, for I thought we were going through the Ferrières, that we were entering the passage between Herm and Jethou. This passage is intricate and winds almost in the shape of the letter S, between long reefs of rocks. At its farthest extremity or exit, nearly one mile from the Island of Herm and two from Guernsey, the clear channel lies between two long ridgelike rocks, covered at that hour of the tide, but each marked by a post or beacon. The one north of the passage is called "Le Petit Creux" Rock; the other to the south is called the "Aligante." It was about half-past five o'clock and a shower coming on added to the growing darkness. Our captain was at the wheel, which, as is usual in these steam-tugs, is placed forward of the funnel. I heard him say to the look-out-man in the bow "Do you see the posts?" "No," was the reply, "but there is the tower" (meaning Brehon Castle). "Then we must have passed the post, go back to your engine." The man obeyed and had scarcely reached the engine-room when the captain called out, "There's the post." It was the Creux beacon—not ten yards ahead! Hard up went the helm, but too late—we were going *full speed* to cross the flood tide and oh! the awful sound of that crash! The captain threw up his arms, and uttered one awful despairing cry, "All's lost! All's lost!" As long as we live this cry will haunt us! I

started forward and said, "The tide is falling, she is fixed on the rock." "No, sir, she is filling fast, we are lost." I remember distinctly that I felt no terror. A solemn awe indeed came over me—the first thought being, "Am I prepared to appear before my Maker?" and I mentally thanked God that He had sent me and mine during the past year one trial after another to prepare us for *this*—the *last*—and now here was the end for which He had been working. Had these trials accomplished His purpose in sending them? He alone was the Judge. Not a scream or a sound was uttered by any of the women. They behaved nobly, merely asking what had happened. "All is lost," was the reply. Someone, I believe it was my son, said, "No, there is yet the boat." So small was she, no one had thought of her. The captain jumped in, followed by the two men, but could not unfasten the after-tackle.. My son, accustomed to boating, got in and did this, and the stoker, calling for a knife which I gave him, cut the other. Mrs. Collings and servants were now hurried into the frail bark and with the captain and crew brought the load up to seven persons, in a boat intended for six. My son had already jumped back to remain with me and my man servant. The deck was now almost level with the water. "Come on, Mr. Collings, come on," shouted the captain, "she's sliding off the rock, she's sinking." "No," I said, "you are enough, she cannot carry any more." "Yes, yes, come in, come in all." So we all three followed and were now ten persons in a boat fitted only for six. Her gunwale was a few inches only above the sea. There were but two thole-pins for the oars, and my son and I pressed the oars in their places whilst the captain and the stoker tried to row. The oars had no power, the boat being buried so deep. Every now and then we shipped some sea over bow and side.

My son found a baler at last, and was continually at work, keeping the water from increasing. There was much disputing among the men about the course we should take ; the captain wishing to run the boat on some islet or on the first beach. I thought he had lost his presence of mind and so took the command, and insisted on pulling south, thus keeping her head to wind. The other two men knew I was right and obeyed. Alas ! a black squall came on, hiding the lights and the land too. The sea broke and hissed spitefully around us, and one by one the stoutest hearts gave way. Although I then thought we were only prolonging our misery ; that, having been hitherto only just able to keep her from filling, now, with this squall, it would soon be over with all of us. Yet I tried not to show my real thoughts, and cheered on the rowers. One after the other the men who had sided with me against the captain, in keeping the boat to the wind, gave in and asked to row her ashore. Thank God I was kept firm in His strength and said, " No, you'll drown the women ; she can't live if we get athwart the sea, and you know it." They were silent, but twenty times over the same continued battle had to be gone over again with them. I can say this for the captain that he stuck well to his oar and pulled strongly to the last, but too often his despairing words, " We're drifting, we are going up the Russell, we are lost," were enough to crush all hope out of the others. My only part was to cheer on, first this man at the oar, then the other (for we had no rudder), to meet the seas. True, we never moved ahead at all ; or, if we gained an inch we lost it the next moment and drifted, drifted backwards amongst the rocks between Brehon Tower and Herm. Still, we had almost always been gradually edging in sideways towards the north-west shore of Herm ! Every moment I cheered them along with

assurances that the lights of Herm were getting larger, that I saw lanthorns carried about, that help was near. "Pull away, men, keep up your hearts, God has spared us when the vessel struck. He will not abandon us now. We are in His hands, He alone can and will save us." It was a dreary two hours of this work! My poor servants (one old nurse aged 72), lying in the wet, drenched with rain and salt-water; once, indeed, I feared this poor soul had succumbed. We had now lost sight of the Herm lights, because we had drifted past to the north-west end of the Island, and the hill of the Grand Monceau hid them from us; but there the tide, thank God, was less strong and the swells less heavy. Slowly we began to gain our way against it, and in half an hour more we pulled along shore till we reached the jetty. This was at half-past seven and we had left the sinking vessel at half-past five. What a landing that was! We could not speak for some moments to those who came round us, wondering as if we had fallen from the clouds. Our hearts were indeed full of thankfulness to Almighty God. Nothing could exceed the kindness and generous welcome of Col. Feilden, the proprietor of the Island. He ordered rooms to be got ready and blazing fires to warm us, and when we begged him to allow us to put up at the Hotel as being nearer the shore, he and Mrs. Feilden sent down clothing and provisions and ordered everything to be provided for us at his own cost. Mrs. Vian, her daughters, and assistants were most sympathizing, and attentive.

Topography of Sark

Having concluded the Historical Sketch of Sark, it will be well to give a full description of the Island, in order to make it better known. It is

always pleasant to see the portrait of those whose history one has been reading, for one is better able to understand and judge of a person whose appearance and features are familiar.

The Island of Sark,[1] seen from a distance, as from Guernsey, appears to be merely a high precipitous rock, bare of verdure or vegetation. It offers no attractions to the visitor, and this explains why numbers of travellers have passed by without approaching the spot, or attempting to land. When seen from a nearer point of view the Island assumes higher proportions, and the perpendicular rocks are found to rise from 250 to 300 feet.

The coast is formed of various coloured rocks, interspersed with patches of verdure, affording an agreeable *coup-d'œil*.

At first sight the Island appears inaccessible, although a few small bays or inlets are distinguishable at the foot of narrow valleys, but all possibility of an ascent seems out of the question.

If the Island be approached from the south, the same characteristics meet the eye ; bold precipitous cliffs, with rather more vegetation on their summit, and here and there a few small dwellings, several bays, and slight undulations, but no facilities for landing or for ascending the heights.

[1] Greak Serk is rather more than two miles (4,100 yards) in length, from North to South, and Little Serk rather less than a mile. . . . The greatest width of land in the principal island is about 3,000 yards. Serk is about six miles from Guernsey. By recent measurements the highest point of Serk is determined to be 365 feet above mean tide.—ANSTED.

On the east, much the same feature appear, with the exception of a bay and valley named Dicart, tolerably large and accessible ; but as there is no harbour and the water is shallow, landing is rendered somewhat difficult, for it is necessary to make use of small boats. The ascent up the cliff is gradual and easy.

Towards the north the aspect changes. The incline is not so great, and verdure covers the slopes down to the water's edge. First is seen the Eperquerie harbour ; not that it has any right to the title of harbour, only inasmuch as it is easy to land there with the help of rowing boats in calm weather ; and the path up the cliff is not very steep, though invalids or people suffering from sea sickness, might find it rather trying.

Following the coast in a south-eastern direction, the rocks re-appear in all their grandeur, and height, and all entry into the Island seems closed. The tourist is left to wonder whither he is being taken, where he will be put on shore, and how he will reach the top of the Island. He sees before him nothing but a rampart of towering rocks.

After coasting along these lofty walls, and passing through a narrow passage between masses of rock, the steamer enters a small bay, called La Baie de la Motte, and there casts anchor. But why anchor here ? For of all the bays passed on the way, this one looks the most shut in, and this point the least accessible of any.

The tourist notices that there is an excellent breakwater, and that once inside this harbour, he is, as it were, within a small enclosure ; behind him is the breakwater, and all around are lofty perpendicular cliffs. He comes to the conclusion that he is at the bottom of a funnel or basin from whence there is no exit but by the way he entered. Must he climb the heights before him, and up which slight traces of a pathway are discernible ? But this appears to him impossible. And he marvels that anyone should have brought him to such a place, a so-called harbour, but in reality a mere Creux (hole), as it is well named. At the first glance there seems nothing left for him whatever of exit, but to re-embark and return the way he came, bidding farewell to Serk, which, like a coy beauty, declines to unveil her loveliness.

A similar mistake was made not long since, and the same thing would have occurred many a time had not the door or outlet been pointed out. The stranger on landing sees groups of people moving away from the shore and pier, and finally disappearing suddenly in two directions. Following their footsteps, he comes to an opening at the base of the cliff, a tunnel roughly cut through the solid rock, and when he has passed through to the other extremity, he sees a second tunnel, the old one pierced in 1588, resembling the one he has just left, and also quarried out of the rock. He is now upon a fine large platform ; on one hand is the open sea, and on the other a good broad

CITY OF WESTMINSTER

road, up which he may walk without fear of losing his way. It winds about along the bottom of a rather long and steep valley. The road is wide and well made, and on either side, the whole length of the way, are verdant hills clothed with gorse and other bushes, ferns, and many wild flowers, refreshing the sight, and diverting the thoughts from the fatigues of the steep ascent.

The perpendicular rocks—in many parts sterile, but variously tinted and covered with richly coloured lichens—the peculiarity of the harbour, with its straight bare walls ; the tunnels appearing so unexpectedly, or opening out so suddenly all combine to charm the stranger who finds himself not only well out of the Creux, but also on a good road, situated in a beautiful valley. The contrast is great, and has elicited many an exclamation of surprise and admiration, for the spot seems like enchanted ground.

Let us pause here for a moment, as there is much to say on the subject of this singular harbour. It has a history of its own, interesting to the Sarkese, and also to the tourist, who may wish to learn why such a spot was selected for the one harbour of Sark.

In times gone by, in the days of the Celts, and of St. Maglorius, up to the sixteenth century, the landing place was at the Eperquerie. It was no harbour, and ships could not find shelter there ; but it was a good landing place, and the ascent was more practicable there than elsewhere. But

when the Seigneur de St. Ouen, Hilary de Carteret had established his little colony in the Island, it struck him that as they all came from Jersey, and wished to keep up their connection with Jersey, a harbour facing Jersey would be more convenient. After due consideration of all the places available for that object, he decided upon the Baie de la Motte. But, unfortunately, there was no access to it from the land side. He therefore sent for workmen who raised a wall of stones and earth at the entrance of the adjoining creek called La Chaussée St. Chené. He then pierced the rock to form a tunnel ; and as this Baie de la Motte did not afford sufficient protection for boats, he placed a row of capstans at the foot of the cliff in order to draw them up for safety during heavy storms. This was the only means of ensuring their security. He then constructed a road through the valley leading down to the Chaussée St. Chené, and thence through the tunnel to the bay, henceforth known as Le Creux.

But all this was very far from affording the desired security ; the waves entered freely into the bay, and in rough weather reached the boats that were drawn up on shore, making it necessary to pull them farther up by sheer force—hard work this and dangerous too on a dark night, when masses of rock loosened by rain and tempest would sometimes fall from the overhanging cliff.

The road inland from the harbour, was badly made, uneven, muddy, and very narrow, so that

two conveyances could not pass abreast, and it was necessary for the one to turn aside into a recess left for that purpose, while the other passed on. Still it was an improvement on the past, for up to this time Sark could not boast of one cart road ; everything had to be brought to the top of the Island on the sledges or on the back. Some idea may thus be formed of the exertions and fatigues undergone by the early colonists.

On account of the insecurity of this so-called harbour, the inhabitants made an attempt, in 1788, to build another with their own hands. The undertaking, however, was abandoned after several unsuccessful efforts, and their work having also been destroyed, they renewed the attempt, with the help of proper masons, in 1816. This was was also washed away by the sea. But in 1822 Mr. P. Le Pelley, Seigneur of the Island, took seriously into consideration the building of a breakwater, for protecting the boats. Now, however, recourse was had to the skill of an engineer and regular masons.

The inhabitants taxed themselves to meet the expenses, but the costs were considerable. The thought happily occurred to Mr. Le Pelley, to mortgage the duty on spirituous liquors to the States of Guernsey, for a period of twenty-one years. By this means a sum of £2,200 was obtained, of which £1,700 was devoted to building the harbour, and £500 placed in the French funds to form a salary for the school-master of the Island.

When the gales blow from the S.E. or S.W. the waves rage with great violence at the Creux. This will be better understood when it is stated that on one occasion the sea passed through the tunnel, breaking up the greater part of the boats at the capstans; and a cutter which was moored inside the harbour, was dragged by the force of the waves outside the harbour, and brought in again *over* the breakwater. Strange to say it was not in any way injured.

Although this breakwater was greatly superior to the former ones, it required constant watching and frequent repairs. In 1866 the sea having made a considerable breach in the wall, little more was required to complete its destruction. A committee was appointed to examine the damage done, and they unanimously agreed that it would be more advantageous to build a new breakwater as low down as the tide would permit, with a broad quay, landing-steps, and other accommodation.

The Tenants held several extraordinary meetings for the purpose of discussing the Committee's report. Some were of opinion that it would be better to abandon the Creux in favour of the Eperquerie ; but when it came to the votes the majority were for the Creux, and for adopting the propositions of the Committee. Whereupon a committee of five was named to carry into execution the vote of the Tenants.

This decision once arrived at, it is but just to

say that the Seigneur of the Island, the Rev. W. T. Collings (although having voted in the minority for the Eperquerie) devoted himself heart and soul to the work ; and it is mainly owing to his firmness, vigilance, and influence that Sark now has such a fine harbour. It is also greatly to his credit that means have been found to meet the heavy expenses incurred, amounting to £6,000. The Island has borrowed £3,200 (having obtained an Order in Council for the purpose); and in order to liquidate this sum, a sinking fund has been formed by reserving the portion of the tax on wines and liquors repaid to Sark as a drawback by the States of Guernsey ; and an annual tax of fivepence in the quarter has been voted to pay the interest. Thus the debt is being diminished at the rate of £200 per annum.

Large boats can now be kept afloat in all weathers, and the capstans are abandoned. The opening at the N.E. of the harbour, through which a constant current runs, is a peculiarity which demands some explanation. The object of this is to give room for expansion to the masses of water brought in by the heavy seas which, entering at the mouth of so small an inclosure, would otherwise meet with no extent of deadwater to counterbalance them. The utility of the plan was much questioned at the time, but it has been found to answer perfectly. Up to the present time, even when the waves surge and fly over the breakwater, dashing up to the

foot of the capstans, the boats moored along the wall, ride safely if not tranquilly, and suffer no damage.

A few years before the building of the present harbour, the inhabitants resolutely set to work, to improve the road leading down to the Creux. The width everywhere was to be twenty-four feet, and as far as it was possible they gave it that width. They levelled all the pathways and irregularities ; placing over all a layer of well-broken stones. It is now one of the best roads, and does credit to the Island. As we have such a tempting road before us, we will now resume our walk.

The visitor glances round on all sides, and is charmed with the view, for he little expected to meet with such a pleasant road and valley. He walks slowly for the ascent is rather rapid and the heat intense. The valley has many sinuosities which mislead as to the length of way, and though he has now been travelling upward for some time he seems no nearer the top. There are no dwellings in sight, and his ideas are somewhat confused as to the configurations of the Island ; he is unable to conjecture what is about to be presented to his view.

Soon, however, as he nears the top of the road he passes several excellent and well-built houses, and presently arrives in front of a neat granite-built hotel, facing a beautiful and extensive panorama. He has suddenly emerged out of a

deep hollow on to a great elevation, and the contrast, when seen for the first time, is striking. There is an extensive view of the sea, with Jersey bounding the horizon in the distance. But what causes still greater surprise, is the extent of surface which the Island presents. He had probably expected to find but a narrow ridge of table-land or barren peak, whereas he finds a large undulating surface of arable land covered with a variety of crops, numerous substantial, though scattered, dwellings, and when the whole scene is illumined by a glowing sunshine, the visitor is compelled to exclaim in astonishment and ecstasy "This is magnificent!"[1]

The Island is not large; there are good roads in every direction, with here and there small valleys, so that the stranger cannot wander far wrong. We will therefore allow him to take a rapid and general view of the Island, after which we will direct him to the more important points, which require some introduction, and have a history of their own. Though all here is on a small scale, there is a relative size and importance even between small things.

But at first starting we feel an *embarras de richesses*. Every spot is deserving of some notice, though not in an equal degree. After due consideration we will commence our inspection with the residence of the Seigneur of the Island. His

[1] These were the impressions and remark of M. Victor Hugo, on the occasion of his first visit to Sark.

position claims this preference, and we gladly render him this honour, for it is well merited.

This residence is situated in a most interesting district, named the Moinerie ; a title awakening numberless memories and feelings of a peculiar nature. It was here that the holy man, St. Maglorius, lived when he came to Sark, in the year 565, accompanied by his sixty-two pupils. On this spot he built a humble dwelling for himself, and cells for his companions. Down even to the year 1835 the foundations of this small house were still visible, and no doubt the cells surrounded his own dwelling.

There is every reason to believe that this small village was composed of poor and frail houses, quite insufficient to afford protection from the inclemencies of the weather; nothing was solidly built, or fitted to last. All has disappeared from this part ; but lower down, there are still some few relics of these first colonists which must be visited later.

At the present day the district could not form a more striking contrast with the past. There are several substantial houses, with all the requisites of a farm, and numerous buildings forming the new or modern Seignorial Manor, a residence in harmony with the dignity of the head of the Island. The surrounding grounds are also completely changed ; from utter barrenness they are now largely planted, masses and belts of black Austrian pine, sycamore, birch, evergreen,

and Turkey oaks extending down to the very verge of the cliff.

When Mrs. Nicholas Le Pelley had bought the Seigneurie of Serk, her son, who shortly succeeded her, rebuilt anew his paternal house, in 1730, making thereof his own Manor. He abandoned the one anciently occupied by the Seigneurs de Carteret, and placed his chaplain there.

This new house was the best and grandest, and the most conveniently disposed of any on the Island at the time ; and for those days, it was worthy of the Seigneur of Serk. It is still in existence, but it has undergone several alterations.

At that time the grounds around the Manor and farmhouses were very limited on all sides. But in 1836, Mr. Peter Le Pelley, then Seigneur of Sark, bought a farm that faced his Manor, and had consequently much interfered with it. By this acquisition he was able to close up a road that passed his windows, and to open a new one some distance off. This enabled him to isolate and enclose his house, and to embellish the land newly acquired.

We will now follow the road leading to L'Ecluse, and trace its own small history. This was the place where reservoirs had been formed to contain and store the water, in order to work the mill placed near the bottom of the cliff, at the foot of a small waterfall. These are the sole remaining relics of the labours of St. Maglorius

and his young men. One only of these reservoirs is yet visible ; but, facing the small cottage of L'Ecluse, there are still the remains of an ancient wall, built to form a second and long reservoir. And at some distance lower down, the platform on which stood the mill is plainly visible.

These relics are interesting and precious, they are among the antiquities of Sark that are of far greater value than a mere name or memory.

The bay beneath this spot, called the Port du Moulin, owes its name to this mill. The Port du Moulin is not a proper harbour for protecting boats in fury, and the approach is both difficult and dangerous, except for the Sarkese, as the shore is very rocky ; moreover, there is only a footpath down the cliff, so that everything embarked or disembarked must be conveyed by hand.

Let us examine this bay a little in detail. It is grand and majestic ; encircled with perpendicular rocks 250 to 300 feet in height, and clothed in a variety of tints, most pleasing to the eye ; drawing forth many an exclamation of admiration from the visitor, and making him feel his own littleness as he stands on the shore.

We proceed under a small archway, and coast along the rock-strewn shore, passing under stone galleries and through caverns, till, by dint of much care, we safely arrive at the base of some isolated rocks, in the form of pillars, named " Les Autelets." Wherefore ? Perhaps in con-

sequence of their shape. None but the giants of fables could have made use of them as altars. Whether, however, they be altars or not they present a strange appearance, exciting the curiosity of strangers, and none ever regret the trouble of having paid them a visit.

We have now reached another bay, that of the Saignie, different in style to the former and smaller, but very beautiful; it is covered with sand and shaped like a semi-creux or hole. One of the caves resembles a cathedral in roof and pillars, and there are several other caverns accessible only at the lowest spring tides. The pathway up is very slippery and imperfect, formed of earth that crumbles under the feet ; but with much perseverance and many a slide the top is gained at last.

On the left hand side of the way down to the Port du Moulin, is the Pégâne bay, which deserves a careful visit. In the first place, it will be best to follow the little path leading to the top of a small plateau, of which the side facing south-west is perpendicular, with a face of over 200 feet. There are here many natural seats in stone and turf, and the great isolated rock called the Tintageu, stands out boldly in view. It is very difficult of ascent, and has much the appearance of an Autelet, the largest of them all. The views also comprise the Pégâne and cliffs as far as the Gouliot and Brechou. The visitor will do well to skirt along the water's edge at low tide, as then

the enormous boulders covering the shore, the high slopes of rock and cliff-down, variously coloured, are seen to greater advantage, and present a striking and gay appearance, especially when lighted up by the rays of an afternoon sun. The whole of the coast from the Gouliot to the extremity of the Pointe du Nez is remarkably fine ; and the visitor who has the leisure for it, will not fail to return several times ; and far from growing wearied of the scene, he will find increased enjoyment in each visit. When the weather is fine, the sea calm, and a bright sun shining if the visitor be disposed to take a morning walk to any part of these cliffs, he could hardly find a more enchanting view all the world over. Guernsey, Jethou and Herm, are seen bathed in sunshine, and appear no distance off, every feature of the islands standing out distinct and clear. The sea resembles a large lake, and is of an exquisite blue. The eye is chained to the spot, and cannot be satiated of wandering from one point to another of that grand and entertaining panorama. The morning should be the time chosen for this walk, for then the rocks and cliffs appear in their most brilliant colouring. In the afternoon the islands are partly in the shade and the sea is differently tinted. A low tide should also be chosen for this ramble, as then the rocks seem to rise to greater height, and the colouring is richer.

The Eclus cliff is a good point from which to watch the setting sun slowly and majestically sink-

ing into the ocean glowing with colours of every tint and shade. Then follows the twilight, bringing with it new beauties, and ever varying the perspective. The sight is a marvellously beautiful one, and the visitor withdraws at last, much against his inclination. Undoubtedly the scenery of Italy, Switzerland, and many other places is very magnificent, but the picture just described has its own peculiar beauties. Visitors who have arrived direct from Switzerland or Italy, have expressed themselves in no way disappointed with this panorama, some carried away by the enthusiasm of the moment, even giving the preference to Sark. And numbers of people who have travelled on the Continent and over the United Kingdom have declared never to have seen anything so quaintly picturesque on a small scale as the Seigneur's residence, with its surroundings, and the coast scenery.

In the winter time when the weather is overcast, cold, and windy, the cliffs and shore present quite another appearance, and they are rather to be avoided. Still they have an interest of their own, for it is a grand sight to watch the foaming waves come rolling in, and dashing themselves against the rocks, whitening the shores, and roaring like thunder peals. All is movement and life, very different to flat inland scenery in similar weather, where everything wears a sad and dreary look. Near the sea the eye never wearies of watching and contemplating the ceaseless

motion of the waves, following them as they sweep along and finally break on the shore. There is no monotony in such sights and sounds.

As we are now near the Eperquerie, we will follow the cliffs leading to it, from the Saignie ; and notwithstanding the hedges, brambles, and furze bushes, we soon reach our destination. This part of the Island faces due north, and terminates in a sharp promontory called the Nez (Nose). It slopes very gradually the whole way, to the extremity of the point, which can only be reached at the lowest tides, and even then with great difficulty, as there are gaps which separate the land, in several places, at high tide. But this point is deserving of a visit.

The view from the Eperquerie is very fine, the horizon embracing three parts of a circle. Alderney, Cape la Hague, and a portion of the French coast are very visible in clear weather, and give to the sea the appearance of a large lake. From here also is obtained the best view of the Port du Moulin, the Autelets and the Saignie.

There is not much table land on the Eperquerie and the cliffs are very precipitous, especially on the west side. This is the drill and review ground of the Militia, and where they practise at target. Here also is the small building that served as a guard-house in war time, and from whence the sentinel cried "who goes there?" on the occasion of Capt. Lané's night attack upon Sark, simultaneous with the descent of another

frigate in Dicart Bay, as recorded in the first part of this history.

As the visitor nears the Point, he comes upon the entrance to the Boutiques. From whence have they that name ? No one can tell ; suppositions only may be formed, but it is probable that at one time pirates or smugglers may have stored away their ill-gotten treasures in these caverns. One portion only of the Caves is above high water mark, all the others being filled when the tide is up. The following description is taken from *Scrambles in Serk*, by W. B. Woolnough.

Descending the steep and slippery cliff, we find about thirty feet above the sea, a hole in the cliff dipping deep into the bowels of the earth. Scrambling up to it amongst the debris we look down this mouth into a throat and stomach of grand dimensions. The descent on the other side is easy, and we then stand in a long, lofty chamber, about fifty feet in height and length. The entrance is directly under the fretted roof, and the further way lies down a dark hill of shifting stones, at the bottom of which can be seen a thin ray of light. There is also another steep descent to the sea, choked by an immense boulder. The depressing effect of the gloom is heightened by the silence, sometimes broken by the distant rush of imprisoned waters. We keep to the left in descending, and with some difficulty reach the sea level, through a narrow cave. Here is a platform, from which two arched mouths run out to sea, the floor covered with shallow sea-weed pools. The roof drips with water, and at the sea entry are clusters of bright ferns overhead in beautiful contrast with the reddish brown of the quartz-veined rock. The

contrast of light and shade must charm every eye. . . . With the aid of lights a long vaulted passage can be explored, and from its farther end at low water we may pass out on to a terrace, dividing the extremity of the Pointe du Nez from the main land.

It was at this same Pointe du Nez that Mr. Peter Le Pelley and two boatmen perished, as related elsewhere : thus this spot has a sad history which will ever be remembered by the Sarkese. It also recalls many a narrow escape from shipwreck in the strong tide that even in calm weather rushes round that point, with fearful speed, and in storms is really appalling. There are few Sarkese who have not their tale to relate of escape from death at that spot.

There is a small landing place at the Eperquerie, and a rough platform and capstan for drawing up boats during the winter season. Here during the summer time except at low water, boats may disembark passengers with ease. When, during south-easterly winds, the sea is rough at the Creux, steamers not unfrequently land their passengers here with the aid of rowing boats. For many centuries this, with its adjoining sandy-creek of " Les Fontaines " was, properly speaking, the only harbour of Sark. It was nothing but a small open bay ; sheltered however from all those most violent winds which proceed from the south, and from all points of the compass passing westerly from south to north. It would seem that almost from

the very first the Seigneurs de Carteret, and the inhabitants felt the insecurity and inconvenience of the old Creux harbour, for there exists among the Seigneurie papers, a Patent of Charles II, granting to Sir Philip de Carteret or his heirs, Seigneurs of Sark, permission to build a harbour at this spot, and to levy dues upon all shipping making use thereof.

The following is an abstract of this Patent, dated May 27th, A.D. 1676 :

Charles II., &c., &c.—Whereas We have been informed by the humble petition of our trusty and well beloved Sir Ph. De Carteret, Baronet, that the inhabitants of our Island of Sercq have represented to him who is Lord of that Island, how necessary it is for the said inhabitants, and how great a security it will be to all our subjects that traffic into those seas, to have a pier built in the island at a place called the Prickerie [Perquerie] which necessary work the said Sir Ph. De Carteret is willing to effect and maintain at his own cost and charges, for the profits thereof when finished, and hath humbly desired our permission to build the said haven or pier, and to grant to him and his heirs for ever, the incomes or petty customs, and such power for raising and levying the same of all ships, vessels and goods which shall be brought into the said pier for the recompense of his charges and troubles in building and maintaining the same, as are usually taken by the Bailiffs and Jurats of the Isles of Jersey and Guernsey for maintaining of their respective piers.—Now know ye that We. . . . for us, our heirs and successors do give and grant unto the said Sir Ph. De Carteret his heirs and assigns full and free liberty, power and authority to erect . . . a haven or pier at the Prickerie . . . in such manner

as he or they shall think best. And in recompense of his and their charges and troubles . . . we give and grant unto the said Sir Ph. De Carteret, etc., full power and authority . . . for ever to demand, levy, receive, and take to his or their own use without account of, and for all ships, goods, and vessels, as shall be brought into the said pier, such incomes and petty customs, &c., &c., [as above] and We do hereby command all persons . . . to take notice of this our grant, and to yield all due observance thereunto, etc. . . .

A harbour at the Eperquerie would certainly present great advantages over the existing one at the Creux. For in the first place the passage to and from Guernsey is shortened by two miles at least—those two miles also, it must be noted, are replete with danger from rocks and strong currents. It frequently happens that more time is expended in getting round to the Creux harbour from the Eperquerie than has been required for the whole voyage from Guernsey. Why then was the Creux originally selected for the island-harbour? Simply because the colonists from Jersey naturally enough long kept up their connection with that island. The Seigneurs de Carteret retained their noble Manor of St. Ouen as well as that of Sark, and passed frequently from one to the other. We have before remarked that all the cut-stone, granite blocks, such as lintels, quoins, and even gate-posts were brought from Jersey. From necessity, therefore, as well as from old associations, the link with Jersey was to be kept up. Thus the harbour was required

on the nearest side to Jersey, and there we find it to this day. But now arises the question ? Since in the course of years self-interest has taught the people of Sark that their best and nearest market is St. Peter-Port, why, when the old harbour was destroyed in 1866 did they not bestir themselves to choose a site for a new one on the Guernsey side ? The Patent above quoted proves that the Seigneur and the inhabitants had, as early as 1676, discovered the deficiencies of the old harbour, and planned to build one at the Eperquerie. This, notwithstanding that there was one manifest objection to it—namely, that the passage to and from Jersey would thereby have been lengthened some two or three miles—in fact, the whole length of Sark would have then intervened between the points of the two islands which it was so earnestly desired to connect.

Now let us mount the steep cartway which zigzags upwards till it passes through an ancient wall that presents a barrier to the plateau above. When this wall was built, whether by the first Seigneur, or in earlier times we have no record. At its western extremity it burst out into a bold bastion on which lies buried in the grass an old eighteen pound gun placed there with many others round the island during the last French war. Still keeping to the road and always ascending we pass on the right hand the spot where the militia is exercised, and soon afterwards reach the top or back-bone as it were, of

the Island, where we first find traces of enclosed and cultivated land. Here debouches one of the twenty-four feet wide roads which connects the north end with the rest of Sark. Proceeding southward we pass on the left a small cross-road, known as the "rue des Camps." This leads to the Fort where, in days gone by, the French long maintained a strong garrison. The district now contains two or three groups of houses of which the chief is called La Tour, or the Tower. This marks the site of the keep or main-guard of the ancient fort. It is built in the highest part of what was formerly a fortress, constructed by the Frenchman Captain Bruel and his 400 men, who were established in Sark in 1549, and who hoped to retain the Island for the French King. But if during some years the force that could be mustered by the other islands was not able to drive them out, *ennui*, love of *la belle France*, and hunger, soon reduced them to so small a number that six years after their arrival the Dutch easily made themselves masters of the garrison, the forts, and the Island.

Notwithstanding all that has been done to the place in the way of building cottages, planting orchards, etc., cultivating the ground and opening thoroughfares, some high bastions, ditches and salient angles of the ancient works are still plainly visible. It was well constructed, and afforded ample protection in those early days. There is also a covered way still discernible for a con-

siderable distance. It passes behind a quaintly picturesque draw-well—in itself worth a visit or a sketch. This example is unique even in our islands where so many of these rudely masoned fountains are met with—each with some peculiar healing virtues or superstitious legend attached. The covered way behind this well leads out upon the cliff overlooking the Eperquerie, then the only harbour of the Island.

From this point the most picturesque view of the Fontaines, and north coast to the Nez is obtained, with its small bays and inlets, its points, and farthest extremity. It is undoubtedly one of the finest views of Sark, and one of which the eye never wearies. Here below we find the

Baie de la Fontaine ; it is a very land of sea-weeds. Here too are numerous indents, so characteristic of the island, cunningly hidden among the rocks. At the farther end of the bay is a cave, some yards in length. It ends in an inclined plane of soft yellow earth, leading up to an immense hole, called the Creux Belet. This chasm opens on to the summit of the cliff, and is magnificently fringed with fern and the dark ivy, drooping brambles and long rank grass. One of the rock arches is also worth notice. . . . From the extreme edge of the cliff towards the sea, runs out a narrow and lofty rock. A difficult path lands the scrambler on a reef at the base of the cliff. Near this spot is one of the finest sea-weed pools in the Island. There are also a few caves among the rocky bulwarks.—(*Scrambles in Serk.* W. B. Woolnough.)

Skirting along the cliff to the right, a view of the greatest beauty is presented to the sight,

extending from the Banquet to the Vallette Point. As we are not hurried we will follow the cliff and descend into a large bay called the Grêve de la Ville.

We pass towards the extremity of the bay. Here a huge block of granite lies, shaped externally like some giant barn. The roof ridge is perhaps forty feet from the ground. The roof is curiously carved, and the rocks hanging down from it till their long narrow edges catch the eye, have doubtless helped to give this wall of granite its name of La Chapelle des Mauves (The Gulls' Chapel). Behind a large heap of debris there is a descent into a cave of some length, entered by the sea at high tide. . . . We are now again by the sea. . . . After a minute's scramblings we find a cave and are astonished and delighted to see light at the farther end. Encouraged by the light ahead, difficulties are overcome, and on reaching it we find that we must pass out on hands and knees. . . . We are again in a bay . . . another cave awaits us when we have crossed the tangled weed. Here we seem to have reached the end of our scramble. But stay awhile, and as you face the darkness, a thin streak of light is thrown along the ground. Track it and there under a large boulder . . . lies a further way. A crawl enables us to stand upright in a curious crevice "opening into yet another bay, the finest and the last. A sea palace might have stood there. The recesses of this bay are all under a huge dome, hung with ferns and coloured with quartz veins. Near this arch is the Dog's Cave. Though thirty or forty yards in length, light enters at the farther end. One can visit the last named cave from above, but the path or way to it, is perhaps the most dangerous spot in Serk. . . ."—(*Scrambles in Serk.* W. B. Woolnough.)

Though these caverns have no special feature to distinguish them, except their length, they serve to vary the ramble along the shore ; it is exciting to plunge into these underground passages which seemingly are without limit, and if the explorer has seen nothing extraordinary, he has at least taken good exercise. He reascends at another part of the cliff, by a steeper, but equally interesting and agreeable, pathway. Resting awhile on the turf, he has before him a foreground of high cliffs, grand rocks at sea, and on the verge of the horizon, the coast of France.

Fatigue is forgotten while gazing upon such a prospect ; he can only tear himself away by mentally promising to return thither and to bring a book. But the book when brought remains forgotten in his hand or in his pocket, whilst his eyes range on every side, and can never be satiated with the sight before them.

Quitting this down, we are amongst a group of houses, some of which have a tolerably good appearance, this village is called "La Ville Roussel," probably from the name of the principal inhabitant in some former time, who has given or bequeathed his name to the locality, as has been the case with some of the other farms.

Here stands the little Methodist chapel, a place of no pretension to architectural beauty, whether of exterior or interior. Space and shelter was all that was required by those who

came to worship there, and these things it afforded them. Across the road, is the house built by Sir Philip de Carteret, Seigneur of Sark, in 1611 or 1612 for Elie Brévint, who was minister of Sark for sixty-two years.

Its outward form and internal arrangements testify to the simplicity of the manners of former days. There was but one sleeping room, and one kitchen, which served for dining room, parlour, and study. He had a wife, and three children, and from all we learn of him, the excellent Brévint was perfectly satisfied with this humble dwelling and lived comfortably and happily there.

We now turn our steps westward, along a good broad road, called "La Rue du Sermon," doubtless because this was the way along which the good "Pasteur Brévint" went to the church which was then near the old manor. In those days people used to talk of "going to the sermon" (*au sermon*) (as they do to this day amongst the Protestants of the reformed churches on the continent) in the same way that they now talk of "going to church," for in those Presbyterian times, the sermon constituted three quarters of the public worship; in contrast to the present service in which the sermon seldom exceeds twenty minutes. There was more necessity for the longer discourse in those good old times when books, including copies of the Holy Scriptures, were scarce, and congregations received

their instruction chiefly from the sermons of their ministers.

As soon as Mr. Collings became Seigneur, he made good and beautiful roads like garden walks to converge from three different points towards the church, and planted trees in great variety for some considerable space on each side of the roadway. These plantations besides sheltering the approaches, constitute a real and graceful ornament to the Island. He also gave the land surrounding the church, for a cemetery ; a new one having become a necessity, because that given by Sir Philip de Carteret, Seigneur of Sark, in 1607, was full, and in utter disorder. This new cemetery was consecrated by the Bishop of Winchester in 1855, the Seigneur defraying all expenses. At that date the prison of the Island was only a few feet from the church. In recognition of the Seigneur's liberality, this eye-sore was now taken away, and rebuilt further off at the public expense.

The road continues ; a gentle descent skirts the parsonage garden, which is now full of forest and fruit trees, shrubs and flowers : it was formerly an open field, and in ancient times must have been covered with dwellings ; as holes full of cinders, quantities of sunbaked pottery, stone ornaments and tools, have been turned up in its cultivation.

And now we approach a spot of peculiar interest. Confronting us is a comparatively new

building, a monument of the liberality of Mr. Le Pelley, Seigneur of the Island, and of his solicitude for the instruction and morality of the young people of Sark.

Some years before his death, when the prosperity of the mines was at its height, he devoted all the revenue he received from them to the benefit of the inhabitants, old and young. He held that as a bachelor his own private fortune sufficiently provided for his wants, and having no personal need for the large and unexpected income which he had now every reason to believe would accrue to the Seigneurie, he devoted his time and thoughts to form new plans for the general good, often saying to his friend, the Vicar, " Help me to spend this increase of wealth, which rather overwhelms me, in solid and enduring works for the benefit of the Island."

After careful consideration he decided to build a school for girls, thinking it best to separate them from the boys, and give them an education more adapted to their sex, and future occupations.

This school is built exactly opposite and closely adjoining the place where the Oratory, or Church of St. Mary built by St. Magloire, formerly stood ; and rests upon part of the cemetery attached to the Oratory : other buildings must have gathered round this spot, for several drains which now pass beneath the schools, were discovered during its erection. It is a pity that these interesting ruins were not preserved by the

former Seigneurs of Sark ; the masonry of the chapel ceiling must have been extant in the time of Helier de Carteret, first Seigneur of Sark, for he took shelter there whilst his manor house was building. These relics would have been of great interest to the Island, as the Church of St. Mary of Sark was probably constructed towards the end of the sixth century.

Flanking the school on the east, is the prison ; it is well built, and somewhat better arranged than the former jail ; it has two cells and a fireplace with an enclosed flue to warm both. Never have both compartments been occupied, and very seldom indeed has a native been incarcerated even for twenty-four hours. No malefactor can be shut up there for more than three days ; and this is an extreme case which has seldom happened.

The authorities and police officers of Sark are very lenient ; offences are rare, and never of a very serious character.

Hard by the prison is another building—the arsenal and powder magazine of Sark ; it contains field pieces and cartridges, for the rifles and clothing issued to the Militia are kept elsewhere, as they require constant supervision.[1] There formerly was a small room which did duty for a prison having for its only window an opening unglazed and without bars of any kind, so that the prisoner could see the passers by ; and there was nothing to prevent his escaping. But

[1] The Militia was disbanded in 1880.

whither should he flee, where could he find a hiding-place? It is impossible to quit the Island except by boat, and then only if wind and tide are favourable; it is therefore very easy to capture a fugitive. Sark in itself is a prison from which it is by no means easy to escape; it is therefore very seldom that refugees from justice come to Sark for hiding; the boat which brought or took them away would be well known, and they would instantly be tracked. Neither do strangers often steal or commit depredation in Sark, the theft and the thief would be known at once. There is in truth no hiding place on the Island. The author has himself witnessed the case of a young English servant who had stolen linen from her mistress, and was condemned to three days' confinement in prison. But as she was terrified at being shut up alone, it was necessary that the prison door should be left open for two days and nights, and besides this, to comfort the thief still more, some compassionate people remained with her during the night. The prisoner was seated in a chair in the doorway, looking at the passers by as the people went to church; for she spent a Sunday in prison. There was always some one with her; but as she only spoke English, she could not talk to her visitors. She had the good sense to stay out her three days' sentence in this way, without attempting to escape. Where indeed could she have gone, how could she have left the Island without being recognized? No

Sark boat would have taken her on board, for the boatman would have been punished for having aided a prisoner to escape ; whilst she would have been taken to Guernsey and had to undergo a long incarceration.

On the other side of the road, beyond a small garden, is a row of cottages ; the two centre dwellings were adapted from what formerly did duty as the only church, before the erection of the present building, in 1821. As may well be conceived it was utterly unfit for the purpose, yet the people called it the " Church." It was rather a long narrow and badly-lighted barn, only ceiled by its roof of thatch daubed underneath with mud or clay.

We can scarcely understand how the Seigneurs of St. Ouen—baronets holding distinguished positions both in Jersey and in England, and the Seigneurs Le Pelley who lived in Guernsey and were accustomed to attend well-appointed churches —could put up with such a place for Divine service.

The name " Le Jardin " which the valley still bears, reminds us that here the Seigneur de Carteret made his garden and orchard. It is now a meadow. The declivity in the form of a half circle must formerly—even before the arrival of Hélier de Carteret—have been the site of numbers of small dwellings ; the cultivation of the land has turned up cartloads of stones which have been removed from it. It is supposed that a

public bakehouse once stood at the S.E. angle, not far from the fountain. Old men who have seen the ruins of such a building, and who had helped to demolish them, have said that they have found *pipes de fêtiaux* or " Fairies' tobacco pipes " amongst the rubbish, with very small bowls. Nobody has been able to find one of these pipes for the author. Similar pipes have been discovered amongst rubbish heaps at the Ville Roussell, but no one knows what has become of them ; they probably date as far back as Celtic times.

From the mill—which is the Seigneur's property, although free to all the inhabitants—there is a magnificent prospect. It stands upon the highest point of the Island 375 feet above the sea, fourteen feet higher than Guernsey. From the top of the mill a view of the whole island is obtained ; a panorama of the greatest beauty. We are as it were in the centre of a great lake of which the distant shores are of great variety. None of the other Channel Islands, nor any part of the French coast can boast a view so extensive, so perfect, and so lovely as this bird's-eye view from the top of the mill. It is unfortunately not very easy to reach this post of vantage ; and besides, there is the certainty of coming down " as white as a miller." It is a pity that this was not a tower like that of the Seigneurie, but the useful must be considered before the agreeable. The Sark people prefer a mill to an observatory made for the lovers of fine views. We acknowledge

that a mill is to them more useful than would be an astronomical observatory.

At a short distance from the mill we come to a group of houses called "The Vauroque." Why this name? Long will the memory flourish of the Artillery Sergeant, Joseph Haslehurst, who lived so many years, in the small house at the corner, where refreshments are sold. Long before there was any hotel in Sark, his was the only place where the passing stranger might find refreshment and a frugal meal. He had been wounded in the war with Holland, had obtained a pension, and an appointment as Ordnance Store-keeper at Sark in 1805. Sark was then of importance, on account of the war with France. During his residence in Sark he received a great number of visitors, and his name was known far and wide. He died in 1846, aged seventy-five.

A few steps farther off is a small isolated building named "Le Mât." It was built in war time, for the lodging of the officer in charge of the telegraph which was erected near the house, for holding communication with the neighbouring islands. Joseph Haslehurst nearly lost his sight, in common with several other Sarkese, in consequence of spending hour after hour every day watching through a telescope the other telegraphs.

We are now upon the land belonging to Beauregard, a well-merited name which in this case explains itself; for the most beautiful views may be commanded from every part of this estate where

there is so much to see and much to relate. A little to the right and we are upon the unrivalled cliffs to the north of Havre Gosselin, where we might linger for hours, and return again and again, never weary of the lovely morning view of the isles of Guernsey, Jethou, and Herm, and of the sea.

According to the season of the year these varying combination of land, sea, and sky produce charming effects, and these may be enjoyed at ease from the numerous sheltered and comfortable natural seats that abound all over the rocky ridge, running out towards Brechou and forming one side of the Gouliot Passage.

The long stretch of these cliffs extending as far as the Vieux Port affords a very pleasant ramble. They enclose the pretty bay called Port de la Jumeuf to which there is access by a path that is not too difficult or dangerous. From hence we obtain a splendid view of the Pégane, the Tuitageux and the coast as far as the Pointe du Nez—cliffs of the greatest beauty when seen illuminated by the afternoon sun. Before us is the Moie Mouton (where it is possible to keep a few sheep) a promontory almost separated from the mainland, but to which access may be had at extreme low tide. It is worthy of a visit, but great caution is necessary to avoid the risk of being caught there and imprisoned for six or seven hours by the tide, as has been the fortune of several tourists who lingered somewhat too long on this pleasant spot.

Having wandered about these cliffs, we will follow the path that conducts us to the Saut Join. Some people of lively imagination call it the Saut Jean ; that is to say the rock whence some disconsolate lover with the far too matter-of-fact name of John, leaped into the sea and drowned himself. Wherefore ? A novelist might answer the question ; but we will be content to call it by the Sark name although its signification is lost.

From this spot the path leading to the Gouliot caves becomes rather more difficult. It is not, however, dangerous. In fact, people of all ages and with very indifferent power of climbing, easily manage to descend. At every low spring tide (and it is only at such times that the Anemone and Tubularia Caves can be reached) groups of visitors may be seen on their way to explore these wonderful caverns. The descent into them may be accomplished through a long cavern called the Chimney, which is filled with great blocks of stone of every size and shape broken away from the roof from time to time.

Another and better way of entering the caves is to follow the path to the bottom and then by crossing over a low ridge of rock or by passing round it over boulders covered with seaweed. Having reached the beach in safety, we enter a large and lofty vaulted cavern, containing five openings, the various views from which produce a most singular effect upon the observer. This

cavern presents some surprising effects of light and shade and colour. It has always been known to the Islanders, but one day in 1835, when Mr. Peter Le Pelley, Seigneur of Sark, was exploring this which we may call the Upper Cave, it occurred to him to enter a long tunnel running from it seaward, at the end of which he perceived a glimmer of light.

Half-way through this tunnel, he sank down into a hole full of water up to his waist ; having got through this he found himself within a series of caverns he had never seen before, and of which he had never heard. There was an opening half filled by the sea in one direction ; there was another opening at the top of his path to the left. At his right was a long, tortuous, dark, and narrow cavern, and again another smaller cavern towards the sea, and he then perceived there was an outlet to the north covered with sand, and quite easy of access. All this was perfectly new to him, and he was enchanted with it. Although the study of natural history was not yet become so general as the writings of Gosse, Lewis, and Forbes, and others have made it, still the multitudes of marine animals of every form, their bright and various colours ornamenting these caves in a way he had never seen in any of the other caverns of the Island, filled him with the greatest admiration and caused him to publish his discovery at once. He made enquiries of the native Sarkese, especially those who frequented the bay for ormer fishery,

but not one had ever seen or heard of these wonderful caves.

Mr. Le Pelley invited his friends and others who from time to time visited Sark to come and see his discoveries, and was himself their guide. But it is only at the lowest spring tides that one can penetrate into these caverns dryshod, from the exterior or northern entrance. Nevertheless as many could not restrain their impatient desire to see these marvels, until the proper tide should serve, they contrived to wade in by the tunnel through which Mr. Le Pelley passed the first time he saw the caves.

Many strangers visit these caves every year, and everyone wishes to carry away some memento of his visit. Collectors have removed a great deal of what was of special interest so that the walls are becoming more and more bare and much of their beauty and interest is lost.

Some years ago two visitors, who chanced to be excellent swimmers, were impelled by an irresistible desire to inspect these caves when half-filled by the sea. This they more than once succeeded in accomplishing during calm weather and, of course, described the effect as most singular and enchanting. In this vast natural aquarium they were delighted beyond measure to behold (what were then) almost unobserved denizens of the mysterious deep, playfully disporting themselves in brilliant clothing outside their dusky shells ; myriads of anemones in blossom ; madre-

pores and tubularias, bursting as it were into flower ! Now seemed the arched roofs and rocky walls to live—so covered were they with gorgeous colour and moving forms. Tempting truly must such a sight always be ; nevertheless it is evident that too great risk will have to be encountered even by the strongest swimmer who may attempt to repeat this dangerous experiment. A visit to the exterior of the caves during a south-west gale will offer a most interesting spectacle. The tide rushes along with extreme rapidity ; the wind roars ; the waves dash tempestuously through the larger openings and break into clouds of foam within the vaulted cavern. Then indeed there is an awful " noise of many waters " —a frightful crashing ; the liquid element, turned into misty foam, flies like smoke through the crevices and up the " Chimney " which now indeed deserves its name, for the wind, roaring up it like a blast furnace, belches out the sea-spray in the form of a thick white smoke. It is impossible to approach the upper opening without a feeling of terror lest the violent shock of imprisoned breakers should detach and bring down masses of rock, even from the roof. All the lower caverns are full at high water, and so is the major part of the larger caverns : there is here great pressure on the windward side ; but at the top of the tide there is less noise heard, and the current issues forth through the leeward opening now reduced to a milky stream of hissing waters.

Since we are so close to Brechou this is the moment to say something about the history of that little islet. It is about 1200 yards in length from east to west, and 250 yards wide. It rises at least 150 feet above the sea. The name Brechou is manifestly derived from the Gothic, *brican*, the breach, passage, or gap that the sea has broken through ; and *ou*, an island (like Jeth*ou*, Lih*ou*, Burh*ou*, etc.). So that Brechou, is truly the " Island of the Breach."

The passage of the sea through this breach is called the Gouliot ; from the French *gueule goulet*, Latin *gula*, the gullet, or throat—that through which anything flows or runs.

We have another example of the same word on the opposite side of Sark in the " Goulet," or passage through which the tide runs so tumultuously, between the Burons rocks and the Creux Harbour.

Brechou is also called " L'Ile ès (aux) Marchands " the Isle of Merchants ; and many conjectures have been put forth to account for its being so named. One has been especially favoured by most guide-book writers ; viz., because of its having been temporarily occupied by strangers who there deposited their merchandize, whether ill-gotten or otherwise, and are supposed to have hidden it in what is called the Pirates' Cave. To us there seems to be no foundation for this conjecture : the real origin of the name is to be found in an old Act of the Guernsey Court, dated A.D. 1681 or 82.

Upon the action of Sir Philip de Carteret, Seigneur de St. Ouen, Serk, etc., against Dame Rachel Le Moigne, widow of Mr. James Le Marchant holding power of attorney for Sir Wm. Le Marchant, her eldest son, and guardian to her other children, to see right done by judgment of the court touching the difference between the said parties concerning the Island of Brechou . . . the said Dame . . . has declared that she would not await judgment . . . but wholly cancels or renounces the right her children might or could have claimed in whatever name title or quality, over the said island of Brechou, etc.

It is evident from this Act, that a family named Le Marchant, was in possession of the Island of Brechou, and had made use of it to their profit, perhaps as having formed part of a district given by Hélier de Carteret to Mr. N. Gosselin, as related in a previous chapter.

The Act informs us that the Seigneur of Sark had proved his right to this Island, and that the Le Marchants had to give it up. This made a sensation, and Brechou perhaps continued to be spoken of as the island which had belonged to the Le Marchants. Such we think to be most probably the origin of the name. It is amusing to notice how that from henceforth, during more than a century, the Seigneurs of Sark took especial care in all public documents to have themselves entitled " Lords of Sark, and *its dependencies*," i.e., Little Sark, Brechou, Le Tas, etc.

Brechou is separated from Great Sark by the Gouliot passage which is at high water fifty feet

deep. The tide runs through it at the rate of five or six miles an hour, and at high water it is almost impossible for a boat to row against the current.

The Island of Brechou is accessible from two or three difficult places ; there is besides a little harbour on the west with a good road leading from it. There are neither trees nor shrubs upon the island. The summit is a tolerably extended plain, which for centuries was left uncultivated.

It was anciently kept as a rabbit warren : a few sheep were sometimes left there. Mr. Peter Le Pelley, Seigneur of Sark, broke up about 50 vergées of land in 1830, built a house, and established two Sark families upon it for society and companionship ; but it is a singular fact that *two* families have never been able to live there in peace for any length of time. It has been found necessary to let the island to a single family only, whose members may then comfort each other in the full sense of the complete independence they enjoy—no poor-rates, no taxation, no militia-service, but alas ! no school, nor church. Although so near Sark it is often impossible to launch a boat, to cross the short distance in safety, and the landing is often dangerous.

Sometimes during the prevalence of prolonged gales, the inhabitants of Brechou have been reduced to extremities, without bread, flour, or other necessaries of life.

Great Sark has often in winter been cut off from communication with the rest of the world and undergone imprisonment for nine, ten or more days ; it is therefore not surprising that Brechou should have suffered the same inconvenience, for even longer periods.

Visitors who are fond of boating excursions often picnic at Brechou during the summer, to the great delight of the inhabitants. Although the island is small, it is traversed by several metallic veins, some of which have been opened, but nothing worth while has been taken from them.

Some of the finest views of the western walls of Sark are obtained from the summit of the perpendicular cliff of Brechou, called Belême, which overhangs the Gouliot passage. Seen from such a post of vantage, with haply a summer's evening sun to bring out the full glory of the lichen-covered cliffs, relieved as they are by the dark shadows of many a cavern, the effect is so enchanting as to make one forget the flight of time. At length these brilliant colours merge into one broad tone of universal grey and a hush of chilly wind comes upwards from the gloom of the surging tide some 200 feet below. This is a warning to depart, for it will be near dusk before we can cross the half-mile of sea that intervenes between the point where our boat is moored and the landing at the Havre Gosselin.

Brechou possesses several caverns, one in particular, on the south side, the entrance to which

is large and lofty ; easily seen, and quite accessible. Its length is considerable, it contains some deep but dry holes, and at its extremity there is an immense heap of cinders, the product of various kinds of combustibles, furnishing conclusive evidence that it was inhabited for lengthened periods on more than one occasion.

There is no writing or document which makes mention of this circumstance. But tradition says that this cave was the refuge of malefactors and pirates—at what date, no one can tell.

They were well above reach of the sea and its waves, and the vaulted roof gave them shelter from the rains of heaven.

But where did they keep their boats ? They must surely have left their lair sometimes to obtain fuel and subsistence. History is mute on the subject ; but the ash-heaps speak loudly and plainly. To come to more modern times we will here record an event which relates to Brechou. In the autumn of 1781 the ship *Valentine* belonging to the East India Company, formed part of the fleet which was being convoyed by His Majesty's frigate *Apollo* and was driven by a furious south-westerly gale towards the shores of Sark. She anchored on the N.E. point of Brechou near the rock called " Nesté," where she might have ridden in safety had not the captain commanded a little more chain to be paid out, so as to ease anchors. No sooner was the order obeyed, than the ship struck the rocky bottom

and very soon filled. The crew managed to save themselves on Brechou, which was then uninhabited. The ship was richly laden with silk, cotton, gold dust, etc., from the East Indies.

When the vessel broke up, its cargo was of course dispersed and carried away by the waves. An old man who witnessed the disaster and often recounted it to the writer, declared that the tempest was so violent that it was impossible to stand on the cliffs of L'Ecluse, and yet he observed the convoying frigate making tack after tack up and down the Great Roussell between the Pointe du Nez and of Sark St. Martin's Point, just as if it had been ordinary weather. So soon as the gale permitted, the Sark boats put out to rescue from the sea the floating bales. Soldiers were sent from Guernsey and encamped upon Brechou Island as a guard over what was recovered from the wreck and to prevent pillage. Many of the Sarkese faithfully restored what they had found, others did not. Some houses still preserve small remnants of rich and magnificent silken brocades derived from this shipwreck. The Seigneur of Sark mounted two iron cannons which had belonged to the ship, near the watch house on the Eperquerie, where they remain to this day. Pieces of Indian, i.e., dyewood, have come ashore from time to time ; and most of the iron ballast was recovered many years afterwards by means of divers.

Whilst still on the subject of Brechou Island we

are reminded of a note in E. Brévint's MSS., in the possession of the Seigneur of Sark; date about 1610, but referring to the end of the previous century.

Some English pirates, coasting along the islands, during the time that Mr. Aymé de Carteret was Lieutenant [Deputy-Seigneur] at Sark, stole three cows from Brechou belonging to Guernseymen, and meeting a Sark boat returning from Guernsey they seized on John Hotton, one of the crew, and took him with them because Philip Vaudin, in order to secure his own escape, had told them that he (John) was a first-rate pilot. And although the pirates were challenged by Thomas Roo, the trumpeter (of the guard at Sark) to release their prisoner, they paid no attention to the summons. They also tore off a silver pin from the person of Janette du Val, and took from the boat a barrel of beer, but were at last driven away from these coasts by the fire of the cannon. Going on their way to Jersey, near the Corbière, these marauders met an Alderney boat which they boarded. Hotton took advantage of the opportunity to fling himself into this boat, which the pirates, his captors, had no time to pillage, for perceiving another vessel close at hand they sailed away. The next thing that was heard of them was that they were taken by some Bretons, and carried off to Brittany. They had for pilot or guide, a vagabond named Julian Hamon ; but whether of Sark or elsewhere is

not stated. Poor Hotton complained to Mr. Cosmé Brévint, the minister of Sark, that Vaudin had sold him, etc. He replied, " My friend, this is only a *ruse de guerre*, be content and thank God that at least you have managed to escape from it."

Brechou

It was here that about the year 780 the wreck of three French vessels related in so graphic a manner, though embellished with a few touches of the marvellous, by Paul Warnefried, deacon of Aquila, took place. He calls Brechou Evodia ; or " La Givaude," a name still preserved by a great rock at its western extremity, infamous for its shipwrecks. Captain Deschamps, a native of Sark, whose *Sailing Directions* are to this day most valued, immediately identified Evodia with Brechou, and confuted those who confounded it with Alderney.

We are indebted to Paul Warnefried, deacon of Aquila, for the interesting narrative of the narrow escape of one of Charlemagne's three lieges, who overtaken by a storm in the Gouliot, between Sark and Brechou, was flung on the ledge of a rock and saved.

It would have been perhaps as well if, before we had given any account of Brechou, we had first described the bay on the Sark side from which it is usual to take passage in going to visit the smaller island. This then is called

Havre Gosselin

a tiny bay or cove, surrounded by grand cliffs, that no doubt received its name from Mr. Nicholas Gosselin, of Guernsey, to whom, in 1567, the Seigneur Hélier de Carteret granted at a mere nominal rent (in reward for his services in helping to colonize the island) all that large district of Beauregard, from Dos d'Âne to Port-à-la-Jument. It is but natural to suppose, since Mr. Gosselin's connections were entirely with Guernsey, that in his passages to and fro he would make great use of this small bay—so well placed as it is for communication with Guernsey ; being many miles nearer to it than the Creux harbour, and, besides, being enclosed within the borders of his own territory. Thus then, we conclude, the bay came to be known as " Le Havre Gosselin."

If now we are going to visit it from the land side, we must quit the main road at La Vauroque, and follow a lane (sadly neglected and ill-kept, it is true, but not wanting in the picturesque) which conducts us past the farm-houses of Beauregard until it ends at a gate, from whence we look down the glen of " La Frégondée " and obtain a view of Brechou with Herm, Jethou, and more-distant Guernsey. Passing on to the right, through this gate, we cannot but be struck with the quaint little group of granite-built, thatch-covered cottages, hanging on together and cowering, as it were, from the violence of the westerly gales,

under the shelter of a few ancient, rugged, and storm-pruned elms. The wild "*abandon*" of the whole surroundings suggest innumerable subjects for the painter ; and having a fellow-feeling for him we are loth to deprive him of his delight, but truth obliges us to confess that on a nearer approach he will be disposed to allow that some attention to sanitary improvement is here urgently called for. The house is picturesque indeed, but scarcely worthy of its situation or of its renown. Miss Louisa Lane years ago made it the subject of one of her pretty "Sark Legends"—tales which embody certain Island superstitions, and to one of these she affixed this locality, much to the annoyance of the simple native proprietor who has ever since been pestered and confounded by the inquisitiveness of credulous tourists. There must be, however, something wonderfully suggestive in this ancient cottage of "La Frégondée" for again we find it has acquired new celebrity in the pages of a novel by Miss Hesba Stretton, called *The Doctor's Dilemma*. The author has selected this secluded nook for the place of refuge of her heroine—and for years it will continue to be inquired for under the fictitious title of Tardif's Cottage which she has given it ; whilst the bewildered fisherman-proprietor has already had his steps dogged, and himself scrutinized by romance-loving and wilfully deluded people, determined to find in his homely features some trace of the novelist's cleverly-drawn hero.

On the subject of the varied scenery of this delightful neighbourhood she has dwelt in words of wondrous power. In truth it would be impossible to describe the valley, cliffs, and rocks of Havre Gosselin in more beautiful language, whilst at the same time the author is accurate, lively, and natural. Our object is simply to make known the Havre Gosselin to visitors.

In front of the cottages we have just mentioned and alongside a pigstye, the architecture of which may be described as the " Composite," we find a small gate giving access to a path which descends to the top of the cliff. Here we meet the zigzag and somewhat precipitous descent to the beach. There is nothing to fear although the pathway is somewhat crumbling and neglected—were it not for the zigzag the descent would be altogether impracticable. It is rather more easy of ascent ; yet what must be the thoughts of a troop of excursionists of every age and sex, whom the unlucky chance of a S.E. wind causing a sea at the Creux Harbour, has compelled the captain to deposit upon this narrow beach ? Walled in by perpendicular cliffs on every side but the sea, it is some time before they can venture to scale the ill-defined and dizzy pathway before them. The timid take courage at last whilst watching from below the bolder ones who, with many a laugh and many a slide, and many a halt to take breath, soon succeed in reaching the top. The path ought to be improved. Many have

inveighed against the captains of the excursion steamers for having brought them to such a place ; and yet, when the day is over and the spice of danger, real or imaginary, has given zest to the enjoyment of the whole, then all are loud in exclaiming that it is a most remarkable, novel, and interesting corner of the world—a place of extraordinary beauty, very worthy of a visit, and indeed of repeated visits. Besides the beach itself, Havre Gosselin possesses another landing-place—a strange one indeed, but everything is novel and strange in this romantic spot. Take this landing-place for instance. Suppose we are going on shore from the steamer. Our boat is not making for the beach, on which we observe rather too much surf breaking, but for what ? Why, for a great ladder which we now discover fixed vertically against the wall or cliff on the south side of the cove or bay. Are we to land there, we ask in a tremulous voice ? *Oh mais oui dah*, *monsieur*, *on y monte hardi bien*, is the encouraging reply. But what is this ?—a perpendicular ladder is bad enough to mount, but here we start with horror to perceive that the first half of the ladder actually overhangs the perpendicular. Never fear, if your head be dizzy, a stout arm will support you, for the ladder, with its iron rounds or steps, is wide enough for two people to mount abreast. Yet truly this is not the worst part of it, for above it the ascent (vertical still) is continued by means of a rope and

some too widely spaced foot-holds. Here some agility is required. However, the total height to be thus ascended is only about sixty feet, and then we meet a steep path or zigzag whereby, with many a stoppage to gain breath or to look at the lovely views that surround you on all sides, you at length reach the top.

When the sea is tolerably calm a more easy landing-place may be selected near the ladder at the extremity of that point of the Havre Gosselin which is called "La Longue Pointe." After clambering over a few yards of rock we meet the foot of an ascending zigzag path. The first portion of this is narrow and approaches alarmingly near the verge of the cliff, but after a bend to the right the pathway widens, and joining that which leads up from the ladder-landing before described, becomes broader and perfectly safe.

The state of the tide and of the sea are to be considered before the boatmen can decide which of these singular landing-places is to be chosen. From the pathway half-way up a most exquisite view is obtained of the Gouliot passage with the massive head of Belême frowning down upon it on the left, and the castellated rock, called the "Moie du Gouliot" on the right; the grey cliffs enclosing the now celebrated caves forming the other arm of the bay that we are overlooking. At the point we have reached we have only to turn our backs on this view to behold one equally if not (under certain effects of light and shade) even

more beautiful—that of the cliffs of Little Sark with the sandy "Grand Grêve" Bay below the Coupée.

Several small fishing-boats are kept at Havre Gosselin during the fine season, but during winter they must for safety be laid up at the Creux, for in south-westerly gales the great Atlantic swells roll into the bay with awful violence. Steamers seldom land here, and only if the wind be such as would be likely to cause an unpleasant sea at the Creux Harbour.

Guernsey boats frequently bring strangers to this somewhat awkward but picturesque landing-place as it is the nearest harbour for them. The bay also is well sheltered from S.E., N.E., N., and N.W. winds.

Having at length ascended the winding path from the Longue Pointe landing, let us now proceed to a nearer view of the handsome granite obelisk which here crowns the cliff, and let us read with solemn thoughts the following inscription which recounts the object of its erection :

IN MEMORY OF

JEREMIAH GILES PILCHER, ESQ., J.P., D.L., MERCHANT OF LONDON ; AGNEW GIFFARD, ESQ., C.E., WALTER J. GIFFARD, ESQ., HIS BROTHER ; DR. C. S. GATEHOUSE ; AND MANSELL RENOUF, BOATMAN ; WHO EMBARKED IN A SAILING-GIG FROM THE BAY BELOW THIS SPOT AT 5 P.M. OF THE 19TH OCTOBER, 1868, AND WERE ALL LOST DURING A SQUALL OF WIND WHICH SOON AFTERWARDS AROSE WITH HEAVY WIND AND THICK DARKNESS, ETC.

Four of the persons mentioned had come over that morning in a gig from Guernsey, and landed at Havre Gosselin. Mr. Agnew Giffard was the engineer of the new breakwater then under process of construction at the Creux. It was his usual monthly visit of inspection. He said that it was imperative that he should return to Guernsey that day, in consequence of urgent affairs. It was five p.m. before they put to sea again ; the tide was quite contrary, and a north wind was already blowing hard enough to oblige them to reef their sail in the bay. Trustworthy Sark boatmen had advised them not to attempt to start that evening, but to wait for a better tide the next morning. They were told that it was dangerous to go, and that night would overtake them ; but they went ; and they took the opposite course to that which was followed by the Guernsey fishing-boats that were returning about the same time from their trawling-ground in the neighbourhood. The tide carried them a long way to the south and the wind blowing from the north rapidly freshened till it became a regular tempest. The night fell, and suddenly became intensely dark. The Sarkese, who were very uneasy about them, followed them with their eyes, as long as the light permitted, and prophesied that they could hardly escape death.

Two days afterwards news was brought by a Sark boat, on its return from Guernsey, that the gig had never reached there, and that no one knew what had become of it. A sail and mast which had

belonged to the gig were found that same day, on a rock facing north, at the point of Brechou. Yet still it was impossible to say whether they had perished or been driven away to the coast of France. But some days afterwards a body was seen carried along by the tide through the Gouliot passage and floated by the eddy into Havre Gosselin. It was recognized as one of the passengers in the ill-fated boat. A little later another body was discovered in a small cavern at the Pointe du Nez, and a third was found at the Saut Join.

Leaving the obelisk behind us, we now skirt the cliff, which has no distinguishing feature, saving a mass of perpendicular rocks well deserving a visit. There may be found some natural seats, with shade and shelter, and a lovely view. There are some small caves at the foot of these cliffs, which are full at high water. It is said that M. Victor Hugo has given his name to one of these caverns, as though he had first discovered it. But it was very well known, long years before he visited the island, and it was within an ace of having been the scene of a serious accident. Many years ago Mr. Le Pelley, the then Seigneur of Sark, was making a boating excursion along the coast with four ladies, another gentleman, the vicar, and a boatman. Although there was a ground swell on, they entered this cavern, and the boat was very nearly capsized, by striking against the side of a sunken rock which at that

moment, as the wave retired, was just level with the water. Happily the vicar saw the danger and, terror adding strength to his arm, he pushed off the boat with his stick, at the very moment that she touched and was half over. No one moved ; the ladies shrieked aloud, but the boat righted itself in an instant, and the danger was past. All escaped with a momentary fright, thanks be to God, Who had assuredly granted us a great deliverance ; for the cavern was long and narrow, and the water very deep within it. Had the boat capsized it is certain that the whole party would have been drowned, for the place is far from help, and there was no boat in sight which could have come to the rescue.

We are now opposite the inlet of Port-ès-Sées. It is afternoon ; the sun is brilliant and illuminates the valley of Beauregard, the steep sides of the Port, and the rocks of Little Sark. These lofty cliffs are brightly and variously coloured ; they are almost perpendicular, and of considerable height. This is one of the most beautiful prospects in Sark. From this port to the extremity of Little Sark, the cliffs and rocks present features of remarkable boldness and even grandeur. They are full of variety, now alternating with slopes of emerald turf or purple heather, and themselves covered with lichens or coloured with metallic veins. There are innumerable heads or points of rock, indentations, and little bays. The eye rests in ecstasy upon such a spectacle.

The descent into the little bay of Port-ès-Sées by land is from below the houses of Dos d'Âne and is extremely steep, very difficult, and even dangerous. Whilst the miners worked some galleries here they had fastened ropes all the way down ; otherwise the way would have been nearly impracticable. There will also be found forming the floor of this bay a tolerably large sandy beach at low-water ; at the foot of the cliff is a small cavern, with a real cascade, boasting water in quantity sufficient, if required, to turn a water-mill. This water has a strong mineral odour, and has painted the rock and its own channel with bright colour ; it is said to be rich in copper.

We are now on the road to Little Sark, and must give a passing tribute of admiration to that exceedingly pretty peep of the sea, and the blue cliff of La Vermandée in Little Sark, to be obtained from the gateway on our right leading down to a singular group of cottages called Dos d'Âne, so named from the very marked ridge, below which the houses are built, presenting when seen from the sea that crest-like form of hill—in England vulgarly called a Hog's, or Ass's Back. With one exception, perhaps, the habitations here are mere tumble-down hovels.

Continuing our walk southwards we next pass "Plaisance," well named from its situation, and from the view thence on every side, particularly of its own charming cliffs. There was formerly a flagstaff here ; a large cannon is still to be seen

lying amongst the gorse. In the last war this was mounted for the purpose of defending the bay or to give an alarm in case of danger.

We have now reached the Coupée, the greatest curiosity of the Island, at least so it is generally considered and everyone rushes to view it. Even those who have but a short time to spare for sight-seeing devote it to the Coupée, and return without having seen other places quite as worthy of notice.

The Coupée is thus named, because the Island is here cut into two parts, the one called *Great* Sark, the other *Little* Sark, for the divisions are of unequal size, and both are united by a narrow but lofty isthmus ; and this is the Coupée. It has been formed by the decomposition of a large mineral vein crossing the main body of the Island at this spot. By the long continued action of the rains, and of the sea below, this soft vein has been slowly washing away for ages, till reduced to the narrow ridge we now behold, and which is only prevented from disappearing altogether by the existence of a gneissic rock that providentially bisects the vein, and gives the whole some measure of solidity, but yet leaves it precarious enough because of its fissile nature and rapid disintegration. The solidity of this rock has, however, preserved until the present day the means of communication between the two parts of the Island ; formerly the ridge on which the pathway is cut was at a higher level, but in consequence of frequent landslips, and in order to widen the ridge

which carries the roadway it has been necessary to cut down the apex to a lower level.

The road may now be traversed by a vehicle but not without some risk, for there is no fence whatever on either side. In former days there existed nothing more than a narrow footpath. Very exaggerated reports have been circulated respecting this pass ; but ever since the colonization of the Island by the Seigneur of St. Ouen, the way has been kept practicable for horses, cattle, sledges (*traineaux*) and even low-wheeled narrow carts—otherwise it is probable no one would have cared to undertake a farm at Little Sark.

A considerable landslip took place in 1811 on the Little Sark side, thereby reducing the path to a width of two or three feet only. The same thing occurred in 1862 which necessitated the careful construction, at that part only, of a massive retaining wall built up from a foundation on the solid rock some sixteen feet below, so as to carry on its surface a roadway eight to ten feet wide. Other landslips have occurred on the Great Sark side. An Act of Agreement between the Seigneur and the inhabitants, dated 1812 (drawn up as is declared in the preamble of the act to put aside all further disputes respecting the maintenance of this road) concluded that on condition of two days' labour being given for the Coupée Road by every male inhabitant subject to the ordinary repairs of the road, the Seigneur

agrees to furnish all further expenses for maintaining the Coupée road. The roadway is now 270 feet above high water mark, and its length from bank to bank is 280 feet. The eastern side is nearly perpendicular, and is impracticable.

The descent on the Western or Guernsey side is less steep, and there is a rough way down to the beach.

The Coupée is reached on the Great Sark side by a very steep and narrow excavated road, and it is only at the lower exit of this path that a complete view of the Coupée is obtained. On emerging from the steep cartway that in the course of years has gradually been quarried through the rock, we suddenly find ourselves upon a path which seems very narrow indeed, with an absolute precipice on either side.

Then is the visitor obliged to stop, to gather up his courage to look without dizziness upon all that lies before him, before he ventures upon this ridge that seems so dangerous. He feels as though he must assure himself that the path is safe before he dares to cross it. The height appears very great—more so than it is in reality. His nerves gradually calm down and recover themselves, and he begins to look over the edge, and examine the steep on either side, and the cliffs which invite his gaze on the right and left. He sees Guernsey forming a beautiful object some six miles off on one side, and Jersey about fourteen miles away on the other. He contem-

plates the Grand Grêve, or Bay of the Coupée, the largest and most picturesque of all the Sark bays. At low water there is here exposed a large flat beach covered with beautiful fine sand.

One would so willingly linger on the Coupée, that a few rustic seats here and there would be highly appreciated if indeed it were possible to erect them. Many have naturally enquired why there was no railing or any sort of protection, seeing that the sides are so steep and dangerous. But it would be very difficult and expensive to erect solid and durable barriers here. When the wind is high—particularly if it is from the north-west—the worst wind for the Coupée, it is dangerous for inexperienced persons to cross, and yet, no matter what weather it is, children go across in perfect safety—even those of five or six years old, on their way to school, and no accident has ever happened to any of them.

It is true that they are kept at home during extraordinary tempestuous weather or else some friend or relative holds their hand in going across, and it is often remarked that these very children having this unusual difficulty and even danger to contend with on their way to school, are the most regular in their attendance.

As far as can be ascertained, there is but one authentic case of an accident occasioning loss of life from falling over the Coupée. The Seigneurs Le Pelley were in the habit of having the *dîmes* (tithes) of Little Sark brought across on the backs

of men. One day when the wind was high, a man with his load was blown over the east side, and was killed.

This is a translation of an entry in the Parish register recording the accident.

Since this accident the Seigneurs of the Island have always farmed the tithes of Little Sark to someone on that side of the Coupée who accounts for them either in corn or in money.

The Sarkese—at any rate some amongst them —believe the Coupée to be haunted.

But by whom, or wherefore, they cannot say ; and their tales have no truth nor semblance of it in them ; except in one point which we are about to explain.

One fine, clear, calm, September afternoon, at the close of the day, the author was returning from Little Sark, partially absorbed in the beauty of the weather and of the scenery, when having reached the end of the Coupée nearest Little Sark he was aware of a singular subdued sound that seemed to come from a great height. Raising his eyes to see whence this strange sound proceeded, he could perceive nothing that could account for it, neither bird, beast, nor man; nothing in the air, nor on the cliff-side. Again and again as if coming nearer to him this awful sound broke upon his ear—always with a solemn tone utterly impossible to describe, but which did not seem to belong to this world. He stood still, wondering how he might come to unravel

this mystery. At every repetition of the unearthly sound it appeared to descend from above his head by slow gradations down towards the sea, and to diminish in power at each stage of its descent ; at length it seemed to proceed from the level of the sea on the right-hand side, where a point of the cliff projects boldly into the sea. Being now assured that he had discovered the key to this mystery, and that there must be a cavern at this point which, under peculiar conditions of wind and tide, might give out these strange moanings, as soon as he possibly could he went down to the bay, and there found a long cavern, the middle of which is suddenly contracted and forms as it were a partition between two caverns. The waves in entering this narrow chasm and compressing the enclosed air produced these sounds.

It has not yet been ascertained why this noise is so seldom heard. Numbers of Sarkese have frequently passed the Coupée—nay, many have passed it hundreds of times without ever hearing these mysterious sounds. It is impossible to have heard them without being instantly arrested and compelled to listen. Perhaps some day a keen observer will scientifically explore the cavern and will discover and make known to us the circumstances requisite for these strange wailings to be heard.

The Rev. G. W. Woolnough in describing a visit to the East Coupée Bay, adds :

"On one occasion the author was going to Little Sark, it happened to be an excursion day, and numbers of people were likewise on their way thither. When close to the Coupée he noticed a stranger who appeared rooted to the spot. Entering into conversation with him ; he inquired if the gentleman was going on to Little Sark, as he was on his way there himself. ' No,' was the hurried reply, ' he was not going there ; he had let his family go, but he dared not cross the Coupée himself.' The author offered his arm, and assured him there was not the slightest danger. In spite of all persuasion he absolutely refused to attempt to walk across the oft-trodden bridge, and yet this man said that he was captain of a ship, and that he thought nothing of going to the mast-head. Here is an example of what habit will do.

"How many people have had the liveliest wish to see the Coupée, and have gone away having seen nothing but a distant glimpse of its farthest extremity—not having had courage even to put a foot upon it ! Verily there are a great many light-headed persons in the world around us."

But let us now go down the path leading to the Bay on the western side. The track in some places is steep ; muddy, choked up with thorn bushes, brambles, and furze ; unpleasantly crumbling as we get near the bottom. Here when the tide is out we find ourselves in a great bay called by the fitting title of the " Grand Grêve." Its surface is for the most part covered with fine firm

sand. The bay is now seen to be of far greater extent than it appeared when looked at from the Coupée above.

No sooner has the sandy beach been gained than one naturally turns to look up at the Coupée which towers far above.

No path can be discerned along its keen edge. The way down seemed much steeper than it was found to be. It is not surprising therefore that some who have come here in boats, steamers or yachts have remained in the bay, imagining the ascent impossible, and the Coupée a pathless ridge.

The eye now travels around the rocks which enclose the half circle of the bay, and appear of enormous altitude, and truly, 300 feet is a tolerable height. Some small caverns may be found in this bay, some natural arches, and even an islet or two pierced through and through by the sea—a plain of rocks of all sizes and shapes covered with seaweed, between which are numberless little pools full of life and interesting vegetation.

We are lost in admiration of the variously tinted rocks, the cliffs above the sea draped with ivy, and carpeted with furze and fern. Hidden in a secret nook we discover the loveliest possible fairy grotto, with its tiny cascade, falling into a natural basin the bottom of which is laid with bright and various coloured stones. A painter's hand is wanted here, for one longs to preserve a memento for oneself, when the infirmities of age

shall have crept upon us, to recall happy days spent amidst objects so charming.

The south-west extremity of the bay is very rough walking—being full of boulders of all sizes covered with seaweed. It is much frequented however during the season of the ormer fishing. This most excellent mollusc (which, however, few know how to cook properly so as to please a fastidious palate) is found here in great abundance. There is a pathway up from this corner of the bay, but one need have a good head and a steady foot to attempt it. In fact, without a guide to help, it is really dangerous ; and we shall do much better to return to the Coupée by the way we came down.

Passing on, we turn aside to visit the little fort or redoubt on the right of the road, which was built by the French under Captain Bruel in 1540 and garrisoned by him with some part of the little army he brought with him to enable him to keep possession of the Island. The fort is small for it was subsidiary to the great fort near L'Eperquerie but its position is commanding. From thence one of the finest views in Sark may be enjoyed at any hour of the day ; for the eye may sweep the horizon in almost every direction except towards the mill and—with the exception of Alderney—all the islands of the Channel lie before us, while on the eastern horizon is plainly seen a great extent of French coast from Cape La Hague to Coutances. But the eye returns with con-

tinual delight to rest upon the nearer view of the bright downs and cave-indented cliffs of Great Sark, bounded by Brechou on the one side and the Derrible on the other.

From this spot in calm weather the sea presents the appearance of one large lake, except towards the south-west where the Atlantic stretches far away—solemn ; majestic ; infinite !

* * * * *

The interior of the fort was formerly choked with rubbish from the wreck of the dwellings or rude barracks where Bruel had lodged his soldiers. All this has been lately cleared away by the present proprietor. The southern angle is formed by a covered Celtic cist which was examined and left as far as possible untouched.

Little Sark is inhabited by seven or eight families ; but it only numbers five Tenements having votes as original *Quarantaines*. It is considered as the " Far West " of Sark. The people of Great Sark unfortunately do not seem to set great store nor to have much fellow-feeling for their brethren beyond the Coupée. They appear to think them inferior to themselves in the matter of civilization. In all matters brought before the public meetings Great Sark thinks first of herself and then with undisguised impatience of Little Sark, which must too often content herself with the crumbs. But the observant visitor will yet think, and even now thinks differently on the subject.

The plateau of Little Sark has nothing remarkable about it. There are but few trees round the small farm-cottages but it is tolerably well cultivated over some extent of surface.

The cliffs all round and the whole of its seaboard may compete with any part of the sister-island. The visitor will do well to explore all carefully in detail, and may rest assured that he will see no cause to regret the time so spent nor the unavoidable fatigue to be undergone in opening up so many varied beauties.

The western point deserves especial mention, it is of considerable size, the rocks are very steep and high ; broken ; cleft asunder ; heaped over each other or scattered. One may readily lose one's way in wandering amongst them. Several hours will be required if they are to be examined in detail. We again borrow some interesting details exceedingly well described by the clever nature-loving author of *Scrambles in Serk*.

In an inlet, towards the Vermandée, there will be found, in the side of the cliff, a very small but interesting "Creux," named the "Creux petit." It is at the top about six feet wide while it descends perhaps eighty feet to the shore, which is accessible by a long and narrow ledge of rock. This creux is most clearly but half formed, for, looking into it from above, the bottom of soft earth can be seen, about forty feet above the shore. As might be expected, there is no cave in the creek in the direction of the hole, but there is a crevice, which will doubtless ultimately become the passage through which the sea will tunnel ; at present, as there is no outlet visible, by

which the sinking soil can be washed out, it is a question of considerable interest how this deep excavation could have been formed. From the creek above named there is an arch into an inlet, with three very beautiful caves. The sea hardly passes the entry, for they have been formed chiefly by the action of land springs. At their farther end, the roof and sides change from rock to large rounded boulders and pebbles, bound in the earth.

Two of these caverns present a very singular appearance, a streamlet passes over the arch, nourishing as it descends, the delicate sprays of the overhanging sea-fern (*Asplenium marinum*), whose torn fronds lie on the pink stones beneath the shower. Inside a wall of earth and pebbles fronts the light, and runs across from wall to wall, half up the height, having a dark vaulted chamber above. Here, in the twilight, the brilliant glossy fronds of the *Asplenium marinum* climb up the bank, even flourishing beneath the stones on the cave floor.

The easiest way to visit these caves is to take a boat from Havre Gosselin, by which means the transit may be effected in a very short time but the time chosen for a visit should be just before low water. If the visitor is not afraid of fatigue, and is willing to encounter some considerable exercise in order to explore the coast of Little Sark in detail, he may go down into the Bay of Vermandée, which is most interesting in itself, and may then follow the numerous ins and outs of the rocks along the coast, meeting at every turn with endless variety. He had better, however, take a guide who knows the way, or he will infallibly go astray ; and will wander from

place to place again and again without knowing where to go forward nor how to retrace his steps. He will come upon narrow and rough passages, amongst rocks and great blocks of stone. He will go up, and come down again and will constantly pause to observe the great height of the rocks which form the rampart round Little Sark, and which are almost all perpendicular. He will probably find the prettiest little lake or rock-pool he has ever seen, and which alone, although only a few yards in circumference, will repay all the fatigue he has undergone. This sort of road continues as far as the caverns.

They may also be reached by going down the cliff exactly above the caves. But in order to do so one must pass along a ridge, or rather a natural bridge of rock arching over one of the caves. This somewhat perilous approach is only a foot and a half broad, by fifteen feet long. It is very dangerous to attempt unless both head and feet are unusually steady.

Near this place, towards the South, is a little bay, called Les Fontaines, from a perennial spring. Necessity compels the Little-Sark men to keep a few fishing boats here, but only during the summer, for in bad weather the waves are furious, and come up so high that on one occasion a man who was trying to fasten his boat securely out of their reach, was carried away by a wave, and drowned. In skirting the cliff a most charming walk may be had, full of variety arising from the

configuration of the land and the rocks, which are here singularly picturesque, sharp, broken and rolled together. We thus reach "Port Gorey," which is not a port of refuge—very far from it—for it is only in the fine season that a few fishing boats can be kept there.

This is the case with all the bays or landing places of Little Sark. So soon as heavy winds have set in, all boats must be pulled up, beyond high water mark ; or taken round to the Creux. During S. or S.W. gales or when the sea runs high from some Atlantic tempest, the waves are enormous at this end of Little Sark. It is the best point in the Island where may be seen the mighty grandeur of the angry waves. Port Gorey, and the "Clôture du Bas"—as this part of Sark is called—have a history. All is quiet there now, silent, and almost solitary, but while the mines were being worked it was the most lively, animated spot in Sark.

Several families with their troops of children lived in the houses which had been built near the spot. It was like an anthill ! Of all these buildings there now remain only the ruins.

The two chimneys alone are still standing there like ghosts of the past, or as memorial columns erected to remind the Sark people and the visitors that a mine was once opened here which produced very little, but which ruined many, and threw a veil of gloom over the Seigneurie of the Island.

Continuing the round of the cliffs we arrive

opposite the Branière, a small promontory which deserves a visit. The descent to the beach is not difficult, and at low water the point is easily reached. From its summit an excellent view of the S.E. part of the Island as far as the Bay of Dicart may be obtained. Or, looking seawards, our eyes are immediately attracted by the threatening appearance of a strong tidal-current pressing through (what seem to be, when the tide is low) the ruined piers of a great bridge of rock that may once have united the well-known islet called " Le Tas," or L'Etac, with the point on which we stand. This lofty mass of granite rises boldly out of the sea, about half-a-mile away, presenting a form highly suggestive of its name, viz., Le Tas, or the *Stack*. The latter term is given to many similar-shaped, pyramidal rocks on the coast of Scotland and in Sweden. So also at Jerbourg Point, Guernsey, we find " Le *Tas* de Pois," the Pea-Stack. May not even the Mew-Stone (a rock lying off the headland that forms the eastern barrier of Plymouth Sound, and the very counter-part in form of the islet before our eyes) obtain its name in a similar manner, not, as is supposed from the *Mews* breeding upon it, but from its likeness to a Barley-*Mow*, or Stack? Our " Tas " or Stack (pronounced by the Sarkese *Les* Tas, or L'Etas) like L'Etacq at Alderney is uninhabited, but forms one of the dependencies " of the Seigneurie."

We now come to the " *Pôt*," one of the great

curiosities of Little Sark. We go down into it by an easy path. This Pôt is a natural hole in the form of a cauldron, which has an opening at the bottom towards the sea like an archway.

The descent is made by a very steep path in the interior of the cauldron. Then, having passed the archway and turned to the left, a gallery opened by the miners will be noticed. The mining operations were first begun here ; for a vein of silver-lead is very visible at this spot, with traces of copper ore, abounding. Passing the gallery which descends deep in the earth, another may be observed half way up the cliff ; but little was discovered in either of them save promising indications totally insufficient to justify further explorations in that direction.

Quite close to this first shaft, another was opened in a large quartz vein, in hope of finding pure silver if not gold within it ! But nothing was found there either ; and all effort was abandoned in this direction in favour of Port Gorey.

It is at this part of Le Pôt that the most beautiful quartz crystals are found. When the tide is very low it is possible to stroll along by the water's edge and to find objects of interest, rocks and cliffs of noble form and richest colouring. But it is from the top of the path that one of the loveliest views in all Sark may be enjoyed. The cliffs all along from Le Pôt to the Pointe du Derrible are of singular beauty. Many a pleasant hour may

be spent here of a summer's afternoon resting the wearied limbs ; recruiting the worn-out brain ; drinking in the new life-giving air, acquiring fresh strength wherewith to return to the world's great centres of industry—there to renew the struggle for wealth, for position, for renown or (best and noblest of all) to labour for the glory of God and man's best interests, amidst the vast fields of missionary enterprise at home and abroad.

Only those who by dint of hard, honest work have earned a right to a short period of rest can thoroughly appreciate the exquisite sense of utter repose which steals over the whole man as, lying on the soft turf and inhaling the delicious breezes laden with the scent of sea-pink, gorse and bluebell, he contemplates the prospect before him.

There are several other points of view, each well worthy of a visit, along this eastern coast of Little Sark.

The visitor after noting these will recross the Coupée well assured that Little Sark is not to be despised but very much the contrary.

If he is enabled to make a prolonged stay in Sark we have no doubt he will return here again and again and will never weary or be out of conceit with it.

But it is time to return to Great Sark, where we have still many visits to pay. We enter the valley of Dicart by a narrow and deeply-sunk lane, reminding one forcibly of a Devonshire

lane ; cool and shaded as it is with luxuriant hedges and old trees on both sides.

Our way takes us past Dicart Hotel, admirably placed for those who seek a healthy residence for temporary retirement, quiet, and solitude. It stands on the south side of a glen or dell most luxuriant with trees, apple orchards, and verdant slopes and glades. So snugly sheltered is the hotel that the sea cannot be seen from it—an advantage in a small island ; for after an excursion along the cliffs or amongst the bays, one has had enough of the sea for a time, and is ready to appreciate a view which is wholly rural. The hotel is very well conducted, the attendance is good, and visitors to it are very well pleased with their quarters. Leaving the hotel there is a choice of two paths into the Bay of Dicart. We will follow that which leads through the valley. This bay is very much frequented because access to it is easy and the descent gradual. It is the favourite bathing-place for ladies. Two of its sides are formed by lofty cliffs, particularly on the western side, where there is a natural archway leading through the rock. The view from hence is very fine. The coast of Little Sark stretching away to the right presents a series of brilliant green promontories, relieved by deep-shadowed inlets. The sea appears boundless, and Jersey, on the horizon, like a soft blue cloud. At low water there is a fair surface of sandy beach upon which a walk may be enjoyed. It was in this bay that

Captain Chamberlain, when seeking to recover the Island for King Charles, disembarked with his little army, as has been already recounted in the course of our history. The flat beach and consequent shallowness of the sea makes it impossible to embark or disembark except in every small boats : nor is there any place high and dry, whereon boats may be hauled up with safety. During S.E. or S.W. tempests, the waves in this bay are enormous. If there is time to spare we employ it in exploring some interesting nooks and caves along the right-hand shore. On our return from the bay, if not bound for the hotel, we may branch off by another path near some tall trees which shade a tiny rill of running water. Here some few steps lead through a small rustic gate, and an indistinct path may be traced across a green meadow leading towards a substantial granite-built farmhouse called Petit Dicart.

During the summer of 1859 Her Majesty arrived off the coast of Sark and approached the Creux Harbour in the *Victoria and Albert* yacht, with the *Fairy* leading the way. Unfortunately there happened to be a heavy ground-swell, and the present landing-steps not having yet been built, it was not thought prudent to attempt to land. Great preparations had been made—decorations of flowers over the old arched tunnel ; flags flying, the militia under arms ; and even a carpet laid upon a temporary landing-stage at the Creux. The good and loyal people of Sark

were, however, consoled by the proof of Her Majesty's desire to honour them by a visit, for she made a second attempt two days later on her return from Jersey. The same cause, however, still continued, and although the Royal yachts steamed slowly round the Island and received a salute from the Militia Artillery, the attempt to land was given up.

If our visitor will follow the somewhat steep lane leading up from thence and take the first turn to the right, he will soon reach the long ridge of a promontory running back southwards and commanding the Bay of Dicart which he has just left. Passing through a white gate he will find himself proceeding past a ruined tower on an open down, and continuing seawards on this remarkable ridge or Hog's Back he will meet with traces of fortifications called the Château, or the "Château des Queneves." The small tower on the ridge belonged to a windmill, which has fallen to pieces from old age. From the highest part of this promontory, one of the finest views of Sark and of Dicart may be obtained. Seen from hence the glen is entirely landlocked. Till this point has been visited one has not the least idea that such a beautiful valley or glen can be found in Sark.

The view in every direction from this point is extensive. Here may be noticed a vallum, or trench, cut right across the ridge. There are other indications of its having been made a

station for defence. The French in 1549 had stationed a watch here to command the bay. They acted prudently in so doing, and had the Sark people followed their example, they would not have been surprised as they were by Capt. Chamberlain, in his memorable invasion of the Island in 1645.

Note by Elie Brévint (in 1640) :—

Near the Chateau ès Canivets, &c., spades, swords, daggers, wheels and fresh water shell have been found ; some towers or other edifices had been built there, and I have found traces of a large square wall built below, and going down towards the sea.

Quite near the Château is to be found one of the most remarkable natural curiosities of Sark, which all visitors try to see, namely the Creux du Derrible, incorrectly called the Creux Terrible. It is very truly a " Terrible " hole but its lower outlets are in " La Baie du Derrible," which has given the hole its name. Mr. Métivier says : " There are ' Derribles ' in Herm and in Jersey, as well as at Sark. The word ' Derribles ' or Derrubles signifies ' Funnel-shaped earth-falls,' which the popular voice has made into Creux 'Terribles'."

It is a most curious and interesting object. Looking down from the uppermost edge, where the fence is not even breast-high, the depth amazes and appals even those who are prepared for a surprise. Its greatest height is 150 or 200 feet,

and its diameter eighty feet. The sea enters it at high tide to a depth of only a few feet ; nevertheless, during tempestuous weather the waves make a fearful noise within. It is possible to go down to the bay only by a very steep and difficult path, about 200 yards farther East ; so that it will be best for visitors to take a boat from the harbour. This bay is very beautiful, its sand peculiarly fine, and the surrounding cliffs are very nearly impracticable. The Creux Derrible is entered from the beach through two great archways ; they are of some length, and are blocked up with masses of rock. Once inside the Creux the effect of looking upward from the bottom of this huge natural funnel to the blue sky above is certainly very novel and striking.

The promontory of the Derrible is long, and very difficult of access, but is well worth the trouble of a visit, for the sake of the lovely prospect which may be enjoyed from thence. It is the best place from whence to see the bay. It is easy to reach the Lâches from here ; and to stand and gaze down into the Creux harbour from the top of the cliff just above it. This singular landing-place lies at our feet, with its little circle of rugged rocks, its small beach, and its excellent breakwater. It is from this place that one may best judge of the peculiar features of this harbour and of the labour it must have cost to make it what it is. We now find ourselves

opposite Bel-Air, from whence we started on our excursion round the Island.

Having finished our inspection of the Island we will now present a summary of it. From whichever side a stranger may approach Sark or wheresoever he may land on it, he can form no idea of the Island itself, or at least of its surface. The high steep cliffs which form its boundary : its little rock-encircled bays, where in fine weather a landing may occasionally be effected or even the arrival at the Creux, the only harbour, in the Island, will prepare him but little for what is to come. He may even begin to fancy that his visit will not produce him much enjoyment. But from whatever quarter he may reach the summit of the Island, an immense contrast lies before him. He finds himself on an elevated plateau, set with trees, buildings, fields and meadows in a high state of cultivation. If the weather is fine and the sun shining, everything is resplendent with colour. He finds good roads which would do credit to the most civilized country. Some of the houses have a handsome appearance, are well built and ornamented with flower-pots. He is as it were enchanted, and thinks himself in fairyland. On whichever side he looks he has a far away horizon, pleasantly bounded with islands or far off shores. The blue sea is like a great lake. If he wanders about the Island, it everywhere offers the same delights. If he roams about the cliffs, the prospect changes entirely ;

he passes from one magnificent point of view to another—each possessing its own peculiar charm. Which to prefer he cannot decide. He thinks that which is beneath his eyes should have the palm, but he presently comes to a spot which is better still. He goes down into a bay, and is enchanted with its form and with the fantastic rocks which compose it. He climbs up again, and goes to see another which he thinks preferable. He visits them all and knows not to which to give the preference. He has gone over the cliffs, has made the tour of the Island again and again, and is still in the same perplexity as to choice of a favourite spot. He may sit for hours on one side of the Island, and return home neither satiated nor disenchanted. He returns next day at a different hour, and finds a great change, probably everything looks still more beautiful. There is this immense advantage in Sark for the stranger, he has not to go far, nor take a long and fatiguing walk in order to have a fine view or to enjoy solitude and tranquillity. There is no need of a carriage, a horse, and still less of a railway in order to enjoy a country view. He has all this and more, at a few yards distance from his dwelling. He may stay out as long as he likes, for he has not far to walk home. All the walks on the upper part of the Island are short and not fatiguing. Those who require good exercise have only to visit the bays, all the accessible beaches or to go down and climb up the

cliffs all round the Island, and they will have had exercise in abundance and have revelled in most beautiful scenery. Nothing ugly, disagreeable or gloomy will have presented itsel to the eye—nothing which could provoke displeasure or disappointment. He cannot overfatigue himself ; he feels buoyed up, it almost seems to him that he has wings and could support himself in mid-air like the gull he sees soaring without effort around him. This life-giving air, and the exercise he takes, develop an unwonted appetite, which he can scarcely satisfy ; his digestion is perfect, and he is inclined to double the number of his meals. If he is fond of fishing, the sea is at his feet, rich and abundant. He may make the round of the Island in a boat, and explore its numerous unnamed caverns and various rocks, and rejoice his eyes with their rich colouring. What we say here is but the repetition of what hundreds of visitors have said and written of Sark.

Geology forms an interesting and important part of the natural history of Sark, and certainly deserves the attention of geologians ; for although it has been studied by few, none has as yet published an especial, complete and detailed description of it. Visits, examinations and observations have always been short and hastily made, without going deeply into it, so that a special treatise on the subject still remains to be done. Having no claims to geological knowledge, we will not pre-

sume to undertake the task. Nevertheless, to avoid a blank in the natural history of Sark, we will give a few extracts from incomplete essays on the subject, from the writings of clever men, just sufficient to give one a correct idea of it.

Professor Ansted in his work *The Channel Islands* has published the complete geology of the islands, but in a general way, without giving to each what properly belonged to it in particular. However, his work will be most useful for our object, by furnishing us with long extracts from it :—

Sark, in its geology, as in every department of its natural history, is rich and interesting. Surrounded entirely by cliffs, which are everywhere almost vertical, and of which the composing rocks are varied to an extent greater than in Guernsey, the rocks are intersected by large and rich veins, which in one or two cases have been found to contain a considerable, though not remunerative, yield of rich silver ore. All the phenomena that characterize the other islands are presented in this little rock on a larger and better scale than elsewhere ; while its caverns are so much finer and more instructive than those of any other granitive rocks on the coasts of Europe, that they alone are well worthy of a pilgrimage from anyone who desires to become acquainted with nature's power in this respect. The peculiarity of Sark is derived rather from the wonderful amount of variety observable within an exceedingly small area, than from the absolute magnitude of the phenomena. It is probably unrivalled in this respect, although, of course, the granite phenomena on the Scandinavian coasts are both wilder and grander.

Standing on the cliffs of the Pointe du Château, near the middle of the eastern side of Sark, it is impossible to look at the rocks, either to the right towards Little Sark and the Tas, or to the left at the Pointe du Derrible, without being struck with the singularly hard, unyielding nature of the main rock, and the slowness of the effect obtainable, even by the incessant beating of the tidal waves of a disturbed sea, except where veins of soft material have permitted an undermining action. Such veins, however, in large numbers, cross the axis of Sark at right angles; and the multitude of caverns, some now existing, some partially formed, some obliterated, or of which bare traces remain, mark this peculiar geological feature. They also illustrate the fact, that the older fissures, due to early elevation, range east and west, corresponding with the direction of the promontories; while the modern upheavals range rather in a north and south direction, separating and destroying the continuity of the elevated matter.

The predominant rock in Sark is syenite, and the principal veins are of greenstone, with felspar walls. But besides these are numerous veins of asbestiform minerals, or serpentine, and of soft clayey matter, and some strings of quartz. The veins being at right angles to the apparent cleavage or bedding, the whole rock is broken up into cubes or rhombs, forming, as is well seen in those curious rocks, the Autelets or Altars, a curious pyramidal appearance of detached rocks, not less picturesque than interesting, and exemplifying the structure perfectly.

Large quantities of actinolite occur in many parts of Sark, especially on the east side: and an important vein of serpentine and steatite, with asbestos and talc, has been traced crossing the central part, near Port du Moulin.

The bedding of these rocks is nearly horizontal, and the veins are highly inclined. The vein of steatite has been found to reach across the Island to a little bay not far from the Creux harbour. An important quartz vein, distinctly metalliferous, crosses Little Sark. It is here that the silver ore already alluded to was found.

The Creux harbour communicates with the interior of Sark by a short tunnel cut through a soft north and south vein, the whole of which would ultimately have become undermined and removed, leaving an island of hard rock, had it not been preserved by the breakwater. It would in that case have added one more to the rocks called the Burons, still existing close at hand. This vein, like others in the Island, contains a good deal of metallic oxide, chiefly iron (also silver lead).

The northern and southern extremities of Sark, and a belt extending through the middle of the Island, are composed of harder rocks than the intermediate land. The Island of Brechou and the Burons on the east and west are also hard. They are examples of portions of the middle belt, that have long resisted destruction, though sep rated from each other by soft north and south veins. As already stated, the softer members of the syenitic series are more felspartic and the border more hornblendic. The principal direction, both of the Boutiques and of the Gouliot Caverns, is north and south, and the general range of the Island of Sark is the same. The Coupée vein, and that which has separated the rocks at the northern and southern extremities are, however, east and west. —*Ansted: Channel Islands*, pp. 263-266.

The soil of Sark is neither uniform nor equal, nor of the same quality and productiveness in every part. Circumscribed though the Island

may be, there is great diversity and variety in the nature of the soil. It is formed from the detritus of subjacent rocks, and as a great variety of rocks are found on the Island, some of which are met with in thick layers, and others considerably intermingled, the soil produced by their decomposition is both complex and diverse. Yet its general character is light, friable, and porous, easily penetrated by moisture or rain, but also allowing it to escape and evaporate with even greater rapidity. A few hours of sunshine, accompanied by wind, are sufficient to dry up a heavy fall of rain, and to render the roads firm and pleasant for walking.

The soil produced by the decomposition of syenitic rocks is little else but gravel ; and when mingled with vegetable remains, it resembles dust. This is the case with the two extremities of the Island, but a good portion of Great Sark is composed of large argilaceous veins, forming earth of a more firm and clayey texture through which moisture penetrates less readily and therefore is retained longer, making it more favourable for agriculture. This soil is not of equal depth throughout. On the cliffs and on sloping land it is found only in thin layers.

It is not known whether the Island was cultivated during the Celtic period. There is every reason to believe that it had been a desert waste for a long time before St. Maglorius brought hither his small band of colonists. But from

that date up to the fourteenth century, there are proofs that it was largely cultivated, and that the products were considerable.

It is very probable that during the long period of rest that the Island enjoyed, when its produce remained undisturbed, the soil increased in thickness, and by means of vegetable decomposition became rich and highly fertile. And this, the Seigneur of St. Ouen discovered, when he came to colonize the Island in the sixteenth century.

A few lines are here quoted from Mr. E. Brévint, minister of Sark, in the seventeenth century. "It is stated by the Guernsey people, that Sark was deserted for 150 years. No traces have been found of hedges or hollows, but the fields were divided by neat little furrows as in Normandy." Furrows of this description are still to be seen, or were so, up to quite recently, in the cliffs that have remained uncultivated.

As the soil of Sark is not uniform in its composition, neither is every part of it equally suited for cultivation, nor productive to the same degree; still in a general way it may be considered as fertile, and more especially so in some localities. Nevertheless the land, as in other countries, yields only in proportion as it receives; and if well enriched it produces much. Some districts require more manure than others. The manure that is best suited to Sark is the seaweed, owing to the lightness of the soil. Its humidity and slight saltness keep the earth and plants fresh.

There is always a certain amount of moisture where salt is present, in consequence of its power of attracting and retaining any dampness that may exist in the air. The slightest dew or mist instantly moistens the seaweed, and this is a most valuable property. Happily, this seaweed is close at hand for the farmer. There is a good quantity of it all round the Island, and it can either be collected by land, or, as is more usual, fetched in small boats and brought to the harbour. But the best place for collecting it in large quantities is at Herm and on the surrounding rocks. Boats from three to five tons burden are required for this work, on account of the somewhat long and often tempestuous passage across. Each of these boats carries three or four men, according to its size. From February 1st to the end of April is the time of the year in Sark for this seaweed harvest, consequently at a season that renders the work fatiguing, disagreeable, and often difficult. The tide regulates the time for seaweeding, and it usually lasts one week during each half-moon.

At the commencement of the tide the boats start at three or four o'clock a.m., while it is still night, the air cold and raw, and not unfrequently a strong wind blowing. Arrived at the spot, the boat is stranded at half-ebb, and the men set to work to cut the seaweed and collect it in small heaps ; when they consider that they have gathered as much as the boat can carry, they take

it on board on their backs or in armsful, till the boat is as full as it can hold, and directly it floats, they start, in order to profit by the remaining tide to bring them back to Sark. These men have eaten nothing all day, are wet to the skin, and often the weather is bitterly cold. If there is a favourable wind blowing all goes well, and they quickly make the shore ; but if there is a calm, they are obliged, at the end of a long day's work, to row a large and heavily laden boat, no slight exertion.

When once the Burons are reached, the tide, which runs there with great speed, becomes contrary, and it is only by main force that they can row up against the stream. Not unfrequently they have to be towed in by means of a rope taken to them and attached to a buoy at the Lâches moorings.

Although they have arrived in harbour all is not over, the time for rest has not yet come. They next place the boat alongside the slip—a convenient though sloping and imperfect wall—and immediately the work of unloading is commenced by putting the seaweed into small one-horse carts, that convey it through the tunnel to a platform outside the Creux, called the Chaussée St. Chené, where it is gathered together in stacks. Once the boat is empty, it is taken to its mooring at the breakwater, to be ready to start again for Herm next morning, should the weather permit. Sometimes the wind is so boisterous that none of

the boats can go to Herm, for the purpose of seaweeding, during a whole month ; and occasionally the boats have not been able to gather half the quantity required for the year, or else it has only been late in the season—that is to say in April—that they have been successful in collecting some. In favourable years the seaweed gathering has been over before the end of March. The small boats that go round the Island of Sark itself cutting seaweed off the rocks, have a far less troublesome time of it, for they only go out in fine weather.

Not very long since it was necessary to wait for the tide to be out, and the boat dry in harbour, before the unloading could take place. Men, women, boys, and girls, all helped to carry the seaweed in large baskets or in bundles on their shoulders from the beach to the bottom of the Creux Valley Road ; and the scene on these occasions was noisy, animated, and amusing. But the plan now adopted of carting the seaweed is far less fatiguing and laborious. Formerly, before the present breakwater had been built, it was necessary when the boat was unloaded, and the weather looked threatening, to draw her, with much expenditure of labour and wild shouting, high up out of reach of the waves ; and next morning, if the day proved fine enough for seaweeding, to launch her down again.

Notwithstanding all the advantages afforded by the present harbour, seaweeding is a toilsome and

rough work ; thus the principal manure for Sark is not procured without much expenditure of strength if not of money ; for although the plant grows without expense, it has cost dear by the time it is spread on the land.

Each member of the boat's crew receives for his share one or more boatloads of seaweed, according to the number of voyages made ; the boat is also allowed its load or loads ; and the carts that are employed in the work have likewise a right to one load. So that for each one to have his proper share or portion, six trips must be made to Herm—only one of which can be accomplished each day during a low tide.

The farmer who owns horses and cart is able to cart his own seaweed, but for those small renters of a field or two who have none, the custom is that every third cartload belongs to the man who carts the seaweed. The farmers do not like to be paid in money, they prefer to receive the value of their cartage in seaweed, and this is a heavy charge upon the small cultivator.

In past centuries, up to the middle of the present one, the Sark people gathered a much larger quantity of seaweed, and enriched the soil far more than they do at the present day. Every available boat or craft that could float, went to the seaweed-gathering ; and those who had no boat, collected it along the shore, and brought it on their backs up almost impracticable paths and passes. The courage, energy, and patience dis-

played by the old Sarkese are quite astonishing. It is not too much to affirm that not one-half the amount of seaweed is now collected that used to be ; it therefore is not surprising that the harvests are less abundant. All the seaweed brought to Sark is used either to manure the land set apart for barley or is laid on the meadows, and on such portions of fields as are resting (in accordance with the four-course system) under clover and rye-grass.

Formerly, after the land had been supplied with the necessary amount of seaweed, the boats used to bring a great quantity to be dried ; and when it was dry, it was made up into large stacks as a provision, in case it was not possible the following spring to procure all that was required for the year. A good quantity was also set aside and placed under shelter, to be burnt during the winter months, together with faggots of briars, thorns, or fern ; and the ashes were carefully preserved to be spread on the land, as forming valuable manure. This was the kind of fuel used by the Sarkese in past years, but of late they have ceased drying seaweed for that object, having discovered that coals answer the double purpose of producing a better fire in less time, and with less trouble.

Forty years since, not fifty quarters of coal were brought to Sark during the twelve months, and now fully 500 quarters are consumed yearly, to the great deterioration of the soil and produce, as the

ashes of coal are worthless compared to those of seaweed. But as long as coals are not too expensive they will be used in preference.

The farmers also make use of stable refuse, and litter for the ground. But, with the exception of a few more enlightened individuals, they waste the richest part of it, namely, the liquid manure. This may be owing to ignorance of its valuable properties, or perhaps to laziness on their part, not caring to take the trouble of saving and utilizing it. They are ready to grumble and complain at the land being unproductive, but they do not reflect that they have only themselves to blame in the matter. Sark, in this respect, is still much behind the times.

The land culture is not carried on in any especial or scientific manner. There has not been much advance or improvement made in the implements of husbandry. The plough now in use is the same as formerly, though perhaps it is more solidly and better made ; the iron of superior quality and better wrought. It answers tolerably well the requirements of the people and the nature of the soil, and works with tolerable rapidity. Spades and forks are the same as those used in other places ; but the weeders and tools for the kind of work in other places quickly performed by the hoe, are on a pattern little calculated for speed.

The Sark people divide their land into four parts, which they cultivate in rotation. One por-

tion is for wheat, a second for barley (or occasionally for oats, amongst which is sown clover and rye-grass), the third for grass, and the fourth for a mixed crop of parsnips, carrots, turnips, potatoes, beans, peas, and beet-roots. Wheat is always sown after the roots, or *green crops*, and the barley follows the wheat ; after which the land is manured with seaweed, stable refuse, or cinders. Should there be any spare seaweed it is spread on the clover and meadows.

The rule with all the small farmers is to sow their parsnips, carrots, turnips, beans, beet-roots, and potatoes together in a mixed crop. This is one of the peculiarities of Sark agriculture, and it has this advantage that if one of the seeds fails, another takes its place, and there is no need to sow the land a second time ; besides the household is thus supplied with a small stock of each of these products. Those who have more land make separate crops of most of these seeds. Every patch of ground sown in this manner requires three separate weedings, not simply to remove the bad growth, but duly to proportion and thin the different kinds, and to see that a sufficient space is left between each plant. But the Sark people, as a rule, are not fond of this thinning process, and the consequence is that their crops are crowded, stunted, and not very profitable. The weeding season gives employment to young and old.

Since the potato disease made its appearance,

the people have been obliged to return to the old custom of making a provision for themselves of these vegetables, and using them as an article of food. Before the introduction of potatoes into the Island the old Sarkese always made a good provision of parsnips for the table. While potatoes were abundant they were exempt from the necessity of providing anything else, but now that there is a scarcity they have had to go back to the old plan, and it has proved to be no great hardship.

The work of reaping is effected by means of a small sickle, a slow and laborious process. No Sarkese has ever been willing to learn the use of the large scythe employed on the continent ; a reaping machine would be useless as the fields are small and divided. Those who have not much land can of course reap their own fields with ease ; but there is a custom prevalent that greatly aggravates the work of harvesting, namely, this, that if a man has neither horse, cart, nor plough, his land is tilled for him by the farmer of whom he hires it, and the payment is required to be made at the following harvest by an equivalent amount in labour. For every vergée or two the farmer tills, the tenant must in his turn reap as many vergées. If the farmer carts his corn, the tenant helps him in return to cart his own. Payment is seldom made in money as labour is more profitable, and by that means the proprietors secure labourers for their own harvest.

Threshing is also a work of much time and patience. It is all done in a small barn with flails. No one but the Seigneur of the Island has a threshing machine.

The Sark people are careful in threshing out the wheat to preserve the reed-straw, as they make use of this to thatch their cottages. But the barley they do not require to thresh thoroughly as it is given to the cows for fodder. Nearly all the wheat grown on the Island is exported, but not so the barley, most of which is kept for home use, as the bread made with that flour is found to be more nutritious and satisfying than that of wheat. Still the two kinds are oftener mixed now than they were years ago.

The small cultivators make little or no hay. They tether their cattle on the clover or artificial grasses ; and these thus pastured grow again very rapidly. Frost and snow being rare, cattle are left out of doors in this way a great part of the winter ; and for stable food they have barley-sheaves and beet-roots. The hardest time of the year for these renters is from February to May, as then there is little grass to be had, and some of the poor cows are reduced to skin and bone.

Of late years more land has been left for grazing, as it has been found more profitable to keep milch-cows for butter, there being a good sale for that article of food, and the price being double what it was twenty years back. It also pays well to rear or fatten young cattle.

Many visitors blame the Sark people—and not without some show of reason—for leaving so much of the Island either uncultivated or merely as furze brake. Formerly a good portion of the land now covered with gorse was cultivated, the marks of which are still visible. But in those days hand labour was more abundant, and wages less high than they now are. Nevertheless this land is not wasted, for it forms pasturage for sheep, horses, and cattle, the two former grazing very freely on gorse. Perhaps it is consequent on this furze-diet that the mutton has such a superior flavour, somewhat resembling venison. In this way a horse does not cost much in keep, and the farmer can economize his hay and litter. There is therefore more profit in preserving these furze brakes as they are, than in cultivating them. The gorse is also valuable for heating the ovens and making up the kitchen fires for cooking ; without it the people would be much at a loss for fuel, as were the early colonists in the days of the Seigneur of St. Ouen. Thus this land is neither wasted nor useless. It has its own peculiar value, and that no slight one.

Articles grown for exportation are not numerous nor of any importance, with the exception of wheat, which is nearly all taken to Guernsey. Few potatoes are exported, as the produce is small owing to the disease. Butter, eggs, fowls, a large number of rabbits, fish, and lobsters, are taken to the Guernsey market.

As Sark is far from any market, its inhabitants are deprived of a great source of gain in not being able to devote a portion of their land to a kitchen or fruit garden. True that in the summer time there are many visitors on the Island, but it is then too late in the season for some of the early fruits or vegetables. Every house has its own small enclosure in which to grow a few vegetables for private use. This is the cause why the land is nearly all given up to the larger branches of cultivation.

Cattle.

The Sark cattle are of the same breed and quality as those of the neighbouring islands. Horses are, as a rule, small, and are all employed to work the land, none being kept exclusively for saddle or harness. As they are left on the cliff-downs a great part of the year, furze becomes their principal food, and serves to keep them in good condition. But as the gorse is armed with long points capable of giving a very sharp prick, a short but thick skin forms on the horses' lips which partially protects them. They also learn to stamp down the thorns with their hoofs before eating the gorse.

As a breed the cattle are thin and small, but they give an abundance of milk, and the butter is not only excellent, but generally of a rich colour. The old cows are fattened for the stall, and usually

fetch from twelve to fourteen pounds, according to their weight. A good number of fatted calves are also sent to the Guernsey market.

The sheep are of a small French breed. A larger and heavier sort would not answer on those precipitous, slippery, and dangerous cliffs, which form their only feeding ground. Few of the Sarkese ever think of giving their sheep roots and turnips to fatten them, but kill them just as they come from the cliffs, and consequently the quarters do not weigh more than from four to eight pounds. The meat is good and has an agreeable and peculiar flavour.

An attempt was once made to rear South-downs, but it did not succeed on account of their not being able to live on the cliffs, and the price of land was too high to permit of growing the food they required. A much smaller number of sheep is now kept than in former times, and all the wool is exported, as the people find it more convenient to purchase woollen articles ready to wear, than to make them up for themselves as did their ancestors. Sheep are kept only by a few of the principal farmers.

Pigs are reared in great numbers. Nearly every family keeps one or more, and many are taken to Guernsey. The money arising from the sale assists towards paying the land rent. But every household kills one or two pigs which they salt or dry for their own provision ; and this meat, besides being more suitable to the culinary

accommodation of the people, is preferred by them to beef or mutton, for with a few herbs and vegetables they can prepare a soup that is more to their taste than any other kind of food.

A good number of fowls are also kept, which sell well either to the visitors or in Guernsey, for they have greatly risen in price since such an influx of strangers has come to the Island. Here, as elsewhere, everything now costs double the price it did in the past. The frequent communication by boat between the islands, has greatly facilitated the exportation of butter, eggs, etc., and Sark prices are now regulated by those of Guernsey. But it was not so thirty years back.

As the Island is not large, and is divided into sixty separate tenements, each holding cannot but be small. The largest contains sixty vergées (or twenty-seven acres) of arable land, but there are several of not more than two or three vergées. Nearly all the Tenants let a portion of their estate to small cultivators, of which there are a great number, as every family endeavours to hire enough land for the maintenance of a cow and one or two pigs, for which they require from four to six vergées. The rent averages from six to nine *cabots* of wheat (equal to one or one-and-a-half Guernsey quarters) the vergée, according to the quality of the soil ; sometimes it is as much as £2. It is impossible for the greater number of these small farmers to realize any profits, or

even to live upon the products of their land. So that many have trouble to pay their rent, and are compelled to seek out some other means of gain whereby to make up the sum required both for the rent and for their maintenance. This subdivision of the land is the reason why nearly all the Sark people are husbandmen, only a small number being mere day-labourers. There is always plenty of employment in one way or another, all through the year, for those who want work, and they are thus able to gain their livelihood.

Only a few of the Sark people give their whole time to fishing ; the generality of them combine both farming and fishing. During the fishing season the women have charge of the farm, the men only helping at the time of seaweeding, ploughing, and harvesting. In this way the women spend much of their time in the fields, and the children, more particularly the girls, have to remain at home to attend to house work, and look after the younger children ; consequently there is great irregularity in school attendance.

Most of the fish caught is taken to the Guernsey market. But a good number of mackerel and congers are dried or salted as a provision for the winter months. This latter fish abounds round the Island.

The principal fishing carried on is that of lobsters and crabs, the greater part of which is sent to England. It is very difficult to calculate

the exact amount exported, it can only be given approximately.

Shell fish is much less abundant now than it used to be, owing to the number of boats employed in fishing during the last thirty years. If prices had not greatly risen it would certainly not be a paying business.

The Sarkese do not use nets or trawls, they catch all their fish with a line, except congers, for which they employ an especial apparatus suited to that purpose.

The Sark coast abounds in a variety of fish, especially of the choicer sort as turbot, soles, plaice, brill and mullet with mackerel and bream in great quantity. Boats come from the neighbouring islands for the purpose of fishing with trawl-nets, but even that does not rouse the energy or enterprise of the Sarkese. They are jealous at the intrusion, but are neither willing to fish for themselves, nor let others have that advantage.

During the low tides of September to March an enormous number of ormers (Haliotis) are collected off the rocks, and are eaten, either fresh or pickled in vinegar. This fish forms a rich and abundant article of food for the people. A great quantity are exported to Jersey where they are much prized, as none are found along that coast ; and boats come from that island to collect ormers for themselves, as well as to buy them of the Sark people. During favourable seasons as many as 250 or 300 ormers have been found by

one person in a single tide. The Sarkese are also very fond of the limpets (Patella) that abound on the rocks at low water. They consume a large number. The name given to them is "*bênis*," and it is usual in Sark to say of a person in the lowest depths of poverty, that he is reduced to eating "*bênis*." Several other kinds of inferior fish are caught in great abundance, and eaten by the Islanders.

As the winters are neither long nor severe, agricultural work can be carried on very nearly throughout that season. The crops of parsnips, carrots, and beet-roots are not generally gathered in much before Christmas. The wheat is next sown ; then the deep digging of the earth for the root crops commences towards the end of January. It is a work that takes much time, therefore it must be begun early. Then there is the threshing to be done, after which the sea-weeding season quickly follows. Thus the Sarkese time is employed throughout the year. But with the exception of the harvesting that must of necessity be done within a limited period, the Sarkese is not pressed or hurried with his work, he can do it more or less at his leisure ; consequently work by the job, or task, is not much in favour.

As each tenement passes in its entirety to the eldest son, or daughter (if there are no sons), the younger members of the family are obliged to seek for some means of gain or employment, out-

side the home. Many of them go to sea, and others into services in the neighbouring islands. For several years past each census has shown an emigration of from fifty to sixty individuals. And even with this amount of emigration, there is still too large a population for the size of the Island; resulting in the poverty of many, and necessitating the over-crowding of houses which are neither healthy nor at all fitted for dwellings.

Emigration is not in favour with the Sarkese. They are passionately attached to their little Isle, and are most unwilling to go any great distance from it, or to absent themselves for any length of time.

In Sark, the people work if they choose, for there is no such thing as compulsory labour. Even when the men are employed by the day, they cannot be compelled to work either assiduously or steadily ; they must have their chat with the passer-by, or maybe smoke a pipe. They are fully conscious of their own value, and know that nothing will be exacted of them. If they are not inclined to work, they simply stay away, and thus fail in their engagement. Nothing could be less reliable or more irregular than the Sark labourer. He will not think it necessary to give you warning that he does not intend returning on the morrow, or perhaps for several days, if he feels inclined for a small rest, or change of occupation ; and the farmer, or master, is obliged to submit to the delay. No wonder that the Sarkese, as a rule, do not care

to get employment out of the Island, where there is competition, and where those only who work steadily and assiduously can hope to gain their livelihood. Still necessity will compel to many things, despite oneself.

Notwithstanding what has been said above, the Sarkese have good and sterling qualities. The parents are devotedly attached to their children, a fact of which the children are well aware. There is much generosity of disposition, and a willingness to render mutual help. They are quickly moved at the sight of suffering or poverty.

Formerly these qualities were more marked, but intercourse with strangers has had the effect of modifying them in various ways. It is to be feared that in a few years the character of the Sark people will have much altered, though not for the better.

Owing to the isolation and small resources of the Island, the people are obliged to depend solely upon themselves on numberless occasions. They must be able to turn their hand to any and every kind of work. They repair most of their tools, carts, ploughs and other implements of husbandry, their boats, their houses, and even mend their own shoes. A Sarkese is never at a loss how to manage, for he is a true "Jack-of-all-trades." They also make their crab-pots, fish baskets, lines, and general fishing tackle. The workmanship is none of the finest, nor well finished

off, but it meets their requirements, and that is sufficient.

These characteristics have obtained for them the name of being the best emigrants for newly-found or isolated colonies. And after what has been said this will be easily understood.

In consequence of the existing state of things in Sark, there is a very marked contrast between the summer and winter season, so much so that the Island would hardly be recognized as the same place at both seasons. From October to May it is inhabited solely by Sarkese, though occasionally it happens that there are one or two stranger families making a prolonged stay on the Island. At that time of the year there is little intercommunication with the outer world. The boats do not cross more than twice a week, if as often ; and in rough weather eight or ten days sometimes pass without the possibility of a passage being effected.

The departure and arrival of a boat causes quite a commotion and excites the liveliest interest. The mails that have been so impatiently waited for, are not long in being distributed, and busy hands, together with carts, soon clear the boat of its freight so that tranquillity is quickly restored. But notwithstanding the sameness and monotony of each day, time passes very rapidly ; weeks and months fly by with astonishing speed. If there is nothing of great importance going on in the Island, trifles take the place of weightier

matters, and occupy the attention ; the merest nothings are listened to with interest, repeated, and discussed, so that the day soon slips away. But as a matter of course reports of all kinds are circulated, and become greatly exaggerated as they travel from mouth to mouth ; little attention, however, is paid to them and so they finally die out.

The distance between the different dwellings, and their consequent isolation, is a great drawback to social evening-gatherings, so that the people remain much at home ; and as the greater part are farmers who have been at work all day, they are glad to rest quietly when evening comes. The ploughing, digging, and seaweeding seasons cause much life and activity in the Island.

With the return of spring—more especially the month of May—a great stir is visible everywhere ; vegetation reappears on all sides, leaves clothe the trees, and all becomes bright and verdant once more beneath the sun's life-giving rays. Then the lodging houses are made ready, and there is much talk and speculation about the forthcoming visitors, and a look-out is kept for some stray steamer that may unexpectedly make a trip to the Island. During the month of May a few strangers come over and remain for a day or two, and there are a few excursion trips ; but it is not till June that the steamers resume their regular excursions ; and it is not till after midsummer that the visitors come in great numbers. The *season* then lasts till the end of September.

The strangers who intend spending the winter in Sark should come prepared to depend upon themselves, and their own resources, for occupation and entertainment during those quiet months. Even when there are a few well-to-do families resident on the Island, who might give hopes of a little sociability, there is not much intercourse between them, and they seldom meet at each other's houses to dine or spend the evening together. Sark invites to isolation, and to a home life. And, for this reason, people who are fond of society, gaiety, and companionship, easily grow weary of the life there and do not care to remain any length of time. In order to enjoy living in Sark there must be a fondness for home life, and family ties, and love of retirement.

The arrival of the Seigneur of the Island and his family, for the summer months, is hailed with much delight, and creates quite a sensation. His position naturally calls for this, and his arrival brings new life into the Island, filling up a great void. Moreover, the Manor House, uninhabited and without movement, looks sadly deserted, and resembles a body bereft of heart or soul. There are sufficient attractions in and around the Manor to excite the interest and curiosity of the visitors ; but when the Seigneur is there, he is always visited by numbers of his relatives, friends or acquaintances ; and many strangers make it a duty to pay him a complimentary visit, and so that spot becomes one of the gayest in the Island. Neces-

sarily the absence of strangers from Sark and the cessation of pleasure trips, is felt at the Manor, but the rest of the Island appreciates perhaps even more the Seigneur's presence at that quiet time, than during the crowded summer months. His departure is much felt, and a deep solitude seems to fall on all around.

It is not easy to form a correct idea of the contrast that may have existed in Sark during the two earliest centuries of its colonization ; but in all probability there was no great difference experienced beyond the simple change of season from winter to summer. In the winter time it must have been far more isolated and shut in than at the present day. For, after having exported their small surplus produce, together with their fatted cattle, and laid in their small stock of provisions, they had few other wants, and were content with the products of their land, seldom even leaving the Island. Yet they found means of passing the winter pleasantly enough. They had *La Veille* or The Watch, about which so much has been written with a view of making it out to be one of the peculiarities, or customs, belonging only to Sark. But as no correct account has yet been written, the following is given on good authority.

Formerly the Sark people used to be most industrious knitters ; and this they continued to be, up to the commencement of the last century. They knitted all kinds of garments, such

as stockings, guernseys, caps, gloves, etc., and these articles were sent to England or France to be sold.

Men, women, and even children used to devote all the time that could be spared from the farm or *ménage* to this work, more particularly during the winter months.

In the evening they used to meet at certain houses where there was a room or kitchen sufficiently large to accommodate the party, and there were several such in the Island. Directly supper was over they joined the *Veille* or *Watch*, and all occupied themselves busily either with knitting or sewing. Some were engaged in carding the wool, others in spinning ; and while they worked, they chatted, or sang religious or secular music, as they felt inclined at the time. They were so devoted to these *Veilles* that they kept them up even on Sundays, but on those days they did no work, they only conversed or sang psalms and hymns. They had few books at that time, so that they could not cultivate a taste for reading, or render those evening gatherings instructive and interesting. In this way the winter evenings were profitably and agreeably spent and the time must have passed rapidly.

They had also the following custom. A person, either young or old, disguised himself in a manner to frighten people. At the end of a stick he carried the head of a horse or donkey, and this he placed on his own head, having first enveloped

himself in a sheet. By means of cords, he made the jaws of this head open and shut with a noise, then he ran after one or the other endeavouring to bite them with the teeth of those horrible jaws ; whereupon everybody ran away as fast as they could, and there was a general turmoil, the people either screaming with fright or else laughing at the joke. This head made the round of all the *Veilles*, followed by a crowd of people ; and until quite latterly, one of these heads was still to be seen in one of the principal farm houses. Many an evening was passed in this way, particularly in winter, and the result was that much time was wasted, bad habits were contracted, and were followed by immorality.

Nearly every Sunday evening, winter and summer, there was dancing at the *Veilles* held in the taverns, and a law had to be passed at court, to prevent the continuance of this bad practice. A little later, the taverns were ordered to be closed all Sunday.

In years gone by the people occupied themselves during the summer time upon their land, or in collecting seawood to dry, and in fishing. The Island was little visited. The registers, however, show that it was fashionable for couples to come over to Sark to be married, especially from amongst the higher classes of Guernsey and Jersey. And as doubtless they came accompanied by a party of their friends, this was the means of introducing a little gaiety and amuse-

ment into the Island ; it is also probable that the occasion was celebrated by a small fête.

In some old documents of the Sark Court, particularly in one bearing date 1771, it is evident that during the summer time boats used to come over from Guernsey on the Saturday or Sunday morning, bringing over a number of people, principally young boys and girls, who brought with them a violin, in order that they might spend the Sunday in dancing, drinking, and running all over the Island. They spent several days in this way in Sark.

There has always been a certain amount of emigration from the Island ; young men going to sea, and young women taking services in the neighbouring islands ; but the number who emigrated formerly was trifling compared to what it is now, owing to the wants of the people having increased so immensely, and the means of communication having become so much more frequent and convenient. It is by comparing the past with the present that one can note how great a change has taken place in the Island.

The farms have nearly doubled in value, and their produce, though little improved in quality or quantity, has also become again as profitable. Much money is gained in various ways. The visitors bring a great deal to the Island, which becomes dispersed into many hands, so that all, even the poorest, are benefited.

Although outwardly many of the houses have

not improved much in appearance, they are furnished on a better scale, and display some amount of taste. Dress has also undergone a great change in the last forty years, and the *fashions* are now followed, almost as much in Sark as in the surrounding islands. Compare this with what the letter of 1673 says of the style of habiliments worn in those days, and the contrast will be better understood.

The public games and amusements of the Sarkese are few, and of a simple kind ; and it is only children or young people who take part in them nowadays.

Formerly they used to have a favourite amusement, consisting of six or eight men, or big boys, who placed themselves in a line, one behind the other, and held each other firmly round the waist, while two outsiders made every effort to pull them apart one after another, till one only remained. This game they called "*uprooting the gorse*," and the last man represented the largest or principal root. Children still keep up this game, but not very universally, nor is it often played. It was one of the chief amusements of the *veilles*.

On Good Friday it is the custom for boys to go and sail small boats on the ponds, or pools by the seashore ; and these boats are made a good while beforehand, or treasured up of long standing ; this custom they never fail to keep up. Numbers of these same boys also go in the afternoon to the Eperquerie drill-ground, to play at a

game which they call *rounders* ; it is played with a ball and a stick, and somewhat resembles cricket. Crowds of young people go and watch the game, and so pass the afternoon. But the greatest *fête* of the year for Sark, is *la fête de Saint-Jean*, or Midsummer's day. All the Island makes merry, and every house is well provided with buns and plum cake.

After midday, all the horses on the Island are in requisition for equestrian purposes. Their bridles are garlanded with roses and other flowers, and many of the young people ride about in couples on the horses' backs, not unfrequently the cavalier with his lady-love. They trot and gallop in every direction, including the Coupée ; and sometimes an attempt is made at a race. All the carriages, carts, and conveyances of every description are also pressed into the service, and laden to the utmost with people, who drive all over the Island ; these festivities are kept up far into the night when the weather is fine. Nearly all the inhabitants of the Island turn out to see the riders and drivers, or else to take a walk, often the only walk indulged in during the whole course of the year. The day is also kept up by drunkards and disorderly people, according to their fashion and tastes, and sometimes they cause much disturbance.

The old Midsummer's day is also observed in Sark, but not so universally. It will thus be seen that the Sarkese have not a great variety of amuse-

ments, and that they are of a simple and harmless character.

As might be expected amongst an isolated and ignorant population, there has been, and still is, much superstition in the Island. Many believe firmly in ghosts, and they dare not venture near a churchyard at night for fear of seeing some apparition. There are a few who declare they have seen the ghosts of people who had died some time back, walking about the Island, or passing close to them. They believe that misers, or persons who have conducted themselves badly in life, wander restlessly all around their houses after death. Several parts of the Island are said to be haunted, but by whom, or by what, no one can tell. Some supernatural sight, or strange vision, is supposed to have appeared to some one in that place, or else it is in consequence of some evil deed having been perpetrated there.

There is also a very general belief in warnings ; and almost anything that happens may be looked upon in the light of a warning. If a death takes place, or an accident happens of a serious nature, they at once conclude that what they had seen, heard, or dreamt, was sent as a warning of that event. Scarcely anything takes place without some one having had previous warning of one kind or other.

They have great faith in witchcraft and in the power of the *evil eye* ; or of using spells upon man and beast. If several horned cattle or other

animals fall ill or die, instantly they are said to have been bewitched or to have fallen under the influence of the *evil eye*. They do not doubt that people can cause lice to come upon others ; and if a child or person is much infested with them, they at once conclude that it has been brought about by this means, or is the result of the *evil eye*.

They have another superstitious belief, that of the " *Tchico* " or old dog, the dog of the dead, the black or white beast. Several affirm having seen it, and met it walking about the roads. This dog affects certain localities, and makes its regular rounds, but often it is invisible.

Another superstition held by some is that a piece of silver thrown into the churn will greatly help in setting the butter.

The Sark law of succession is definite and clear. An estate descends in its entirety to the eldest son of the deceased. If there are no sons, a daughter inherits. Should the deceased be childless, the nearest relative in a direct line, comes into possession.

But if there are no relatives, then the estate falls to the Seigneur. This, however, has never yet taken place in Sark.

A tenant may not divide his land, or bequeath any portion of it. The heir receives it, or should do so, free of all mortgage, encumbrance, debt, or rent, with the exception of the seigniorial dues. If a father has contracted debts and guaranteed them on his farm, his heir is not legally obliged

to pay them, unless the lender has exacted the guarantee in writing from the legitimate heir. The debt then becomes that of the heir, and he can be compelled to discharge it. In no case, however, may the land be seized for the debts of the tenant. He may indeed be sent to prison, and kept there at the expense of his creditors, until he chooses to sell his land, having first obtained the Seigneur's consent to the sale.

A widow has the right, during her lifetime, to a third of the land, house, furniture and money left by the deceased ; and she must pay a third of all the rents, dues, and seigniorial rights.

The eldest son shares, equally with his younger brothers and sisters, the remaining two-thirds of the furniture and money. The widow generally undertakes the charge of bringing up the younger children and providing for them. It is a heavy burden for her if the children are numerous and young, so that as soon as they are of an age to gain their livelihood, they go to sea, or enter into service, or else they set up for themselves in the Island, away from the Maternal roof.

If the heir is not married, or has no children, he unites with his mother in lodging and bringing up the younger members of the family, until they are old enough to maintain themselves.

In many cases, little or nothing is done for the eldest son, or heir, during the father's lifetime, seeing that one day all the estate will belong to him ; he is the least looked after or provided for

of all the family, and is obliged to gain his bread as farm-servant or otherwise. The money economized all goes to the younger children, and the heir enters into possession without having received a suitable education for his new position. It is only right to mention that there are now several exceptions to this rule. All the well-to-do families see to their eldest children having a liberal education, and being taught English, as a knowledge of that language is a necessity nowadays. And not only is this done for the elder ones, but also some of the younger children are placed in good schools out of the Island, and this helps to form their manners, and raise them in the social scale, bringing credit to Sark. By this means a new and better mannered class is being gradually formed in the Island, and it is to be hoped that this movement, which is fairly started, will be continued. Sark has undoubtedly passed out of its uncivilized state of former centuries.

In order to acquire a more correct and complete knowledge of the interior economy of Sark, it is necessary that a few words should be said upon its rateable value and the taxes to which it is subjected.

At the commencement of its new colonization, the worth of the land, and of the fixtures thereon, was represented solely by the ground rents and seigniorial dues (dues detailed in another part of this history), so that the sum accruing from the rents due to the Seigneur, together with the tithes

and other perquisites, represented the value, to him, of the Island; without taking into consideration, that its intrinsic value had become perhaps doubled in consequence of the land being broken up and cultivated.

In the course of time whether rightfully or not, the original estates, or at any rate several of them, have been subdivided, dismembered, and burdened with additional rents; which additions may perhaps have represented an increased value, though they had the effect of depreciating the worth of the land to the tenant.

The first road had been made by the earliest colonists, and since that time up to the present day they have always been maintained, repaired, and improved by the inhabitants, as a self-imposed charge or *corvée*.

The fortifications of the Island and the roads leading to the harbour or place of embarkation, are kept in repair by the same means. The defence of the Island has always been undertaken by those of the inhabitants who were capable of carrying arms, each man in turn, without remuneration or payment.

During the two earliest centuries of the colony, whenever any special work or repairs had to be done, the Chief Pleas authorized the Constables to raise a sufficient sum upon all the inhabitants; probably according to their means, but this is not mentioned in the old documents. These taxes were temporary and for a particular object, and

were only levied when necessary. This plan was pursued for a long time. The above has reference solely to public requirements.

With regard to the poor, the earliest records show that they existed from the first years of the new settlement. Their wants were relieved by means of the money received at the Communion ; the regular offertory collected after every religious service ; by donations ; rents set apart for the poor ; and in cases of urgent and great necessity, by collections or subscriptions recommended by the Chief Pleas.

But the time came when a change of plan must be made. The wants of the Island, the inevitable expenses required for its defence in consequence of the war with France towards the end of the last century, and an increase in the number and wants of the poor, compelled the Chief Pleas to provide for all these demands in a more permanent and regular manner. As early as 1770, the Chief Pleas made an ordinance that the Constables should assemble a dozen of the principal inhabitants to decide upon the poor-rates. (This perhaps is the origin of the *douzaine*, who meet yearly for the purpose of fixing the tax that each shall pay.) But the Ordinance of October 2nd, 1793, is still more remarkable and important. It orders that an estimate be made of the amount of property available for taxation. It is expressed in the following manner : "The Seneschal, together with the principal inhabitants, shall make

an estimate of the property-value of the Island, as is done in Guernsey, and shall levy a tax thereon to pay the coal and oil for the guard-houses round the Island."

This was the commencement of a measure that has continued to the present day. The rate then produced a sum of £15 10s. 1½d. No mention is made of the valuation, or of the number of quarters, nor yet at how much each quarter, representing £20 of capital, was taxed. This ordinance is the basis of all subsequent ordinances. It is repeated in 1797, and the tax levied as in 1793. In 1798 the collector is authorized to raise for the poor, a sum of 100 *livres tournois*, upon the valuation made in 1793.

In 1802, at the request of the Constables and Collectors, a tax of one halfpenny per *cabot* (upon the same valuation as that of 1793), was ordered to be raised for the poor. It is ascertained that in 1804 the estimate taken was for 1,424 quarters, bringing in the sum of £25 8s. 6½d. In 1821 the number of quarters was 1,674, producing £20 18s. 3d.

Ever since that time the *douzaine* or committee named by the Chief Pleas to examine the public accounts and fix the number of taxable quarters in the Island, have met regularly every year for this object, and have been careful not to omit anything that might be taxed. The Chief Pleas decide at what rate each quarter shall be taxed, the sum being regulated entirely by the wants of

the Island. This accounts for the same number of quarters producing a lesser or greater amount. Moreover the greater the number of quarters, the smaller is the tax on each.

When the Sark people decided to build a harbour or breakwater at the Creux, they did so in the first instance by means of *corvées*. Later, in making a second attempt, they raised a tax on all spirituous liquors consumed in the Island; and they imposed an especial tax upon themselves, exclusively for the harbour, in order to liquidate a debt contracted for that object. This tax was not included in the one raised annually for the poor. And again when the Sarkese had joined with Guernsey in paying a duty upon spirituous liquors, they mortgaged their share for the sum of £2,000, which they devoted to the harbour. When this sum was paid off, they formed with their portion of the proceeds of this duty a reserve fund expressly for the same object, and it is from this fund that the repairs or improvements of the harbour are drawn, and not from the tax. When the breakwater had to be reconstructed in 1866 for the sum of £6,000 (as mentioned farther back) the reserve fund had to be drained; £3,200 were borrowed; the revenue due to Sark from the duty on spirituous liquors (a sixty-fifth of the amount received in Guernsey) was set apart to pay the interest on the loan; and the Sark people voted an annual tax of fivepence per quarter over and above the ordinary rate, solely and exclusively

for the Harbour sinking fund, and to be levied annually until the total extinction of the debt. The happy consequence of this excellent public spirit is that the debt is rapidly being diminished at the rate of £200 per annum.

The taxable property of Sark is estimated at 4,977 quarters ; but, as was seen above, a tolerably large portion of moveable property is not taxed, and may represent two or three thousand more quarters. Thus the money-value of the Island has much increased, and is considerably greater than might at first be supposed.

If a native of Sark, residing at Jersey, becomes poor and needs parochial assistance, it is to Sark that he must have recourse. The same law exists in Guernsey, unless the Sarkese has resided fourteen consecutive years in one parish, by which he would have acquired a domicile in that parish. The case is the same reciprocally with Sark. A native of Jersey has no right to ask assistance from Sark, but a native of Guernsey after living fourteen consecutive years in Sark, can demand assistance from Sark. Alderney is on the same footing as the other islands. A stranger to the islands cannot be sent back to his parish in the United Kingdom after seven consecutive years of residence.

The climate of Sark differs very slightly, as a rule, from that of Guernsey, owing to the two islands being so close together.

The Island being small and surrounded on all

sides by a wide extent of sea, the waters of which are never very cold, the temperature is naturally influenced by this circumstance ; as also by the conformation of the Island. The surface land is at a great elevation, and consequently is exposed to the full sweep of the winds, which pass freely over it, meeting with nothing to check or stay their course. The storms rarely cause any damage ; Dicart valley is the only spot where occasionally some trees are blown down in the more violent gales, yet there we should expect to find more shelter than in the higher parts of the Island.

During our heaviest storms some few roofs always suffer damage, and stacks are overthrown in the barnyards. The prevailing winds in Sark are the same as those of Guernsey.

An accurate and well-known amateur observer in Guernsey has compared the temperature of both islands, and has found that the temperature by day is the same in both places, but that at night Sark is half a degree less cold than Guernsey. The difference of degree between night and day is never great. In exposed situations it is unquestionably cold, but the slightest shelter immediately produces a great difference in the sensation of cold. It freezes less often, and in a lesser degree in Sark than in Guernsey. This fact has often been proved beyond a doubt.

The hottest days are almost always tempered by a refreshing breeze from the sea, which is felt on the cliffs and higher parts of the islands. The

hot suffocating nights of the continent are rarely felt here, for as soon as the sun has set a refreshing coolness fills the air.

The cause is not exactly ascertained, but the fact remains the same, that the air of Sark, extending to one mile beyond its circumference is not so lifeless, relaxing and enervating as in the neighbouring islands. Numbers of visitors have found this to be the case and have mentioned it. Many invalids who could barely drag themselves along in other places, have been able to be on foot all day in Sark, visiting the cliffs and bays without scarcely feeling fatigued. The writer has conversed with many of these invalids, who have expressed their astonishment at their walking powers in Sark, compared with what they were able to do elsewhere. The invigorating air greatly excites the appetite, and facilitates digestion. Still much must be put down to the unwonted amount of exercise which the visitors take in walking all over the Island. Those who suffer from pulmonary disease experience the greatest benefit from this quality in the air. If they are in the first stages of decline they recover quickly, but if tubercles have formed on the lungs, and that they are ulcerated, the disease makes more rapid strides here than in a milder air. Many are the people who have felt restored to health and strength, without medical aid, solely through this vitality in the Sark air, even after only a short stay in the Island.

Although the air is naturally, and in an especial degree, salubrious, those born in the Island do not as a rule enjoy very good health. They are not robust, and the smallest illness brings them down at once.

There is a general impression that the present generation will not supply as large a number of very aged people as in the past. There is not the physical force and energy of olden days. The present style of living and working is not of a nature to make robust people. Since the first establishment of the colony by the Seigneurs de Carteret, up to the year 1840, there had been no resident doctor at Sark. From 1840 to 1874, with few interruptions, the Island was never without a resident doctor. Now there is none as the Island could not afford a sufficient sum for that object.

It is not known how illnesses were treated in past centuries. Perhaps there was not much sickness in those days. In urgent cases medicine, or a medical man was fetched from Guernsey. But as a doctor's visit was a great expense it did not often take place.

When there is no doctor in the Island, the sick people, or their friends, go across to Guernsey to a druggist and get a prescription which almost always meets the necessities of the case. Many families keep a small supply of medicine to be used in emergencies, and that is found to be sufficient. The boatmen will bravely venture in all weathers to fetch a doctor or to consult one. The Sarkese are soon ill, but they also recover

quickly, though there are a few exceptional cases.

Sark is well watered, but not more so than is desirable. The nature of the soil is such that it requires a good deal of water, because being very light and porous the moisture quickly escapes by means of evaporation. Nevertheless the rain must sink down to a considerable depth, for the Island has many perennial springs. During the summer and in years of drought, all the surface-springs dry up. If the drought is prolonged, the deeper springs and wells lower considerably, and several of the brooks running down to the sea become dry. Although there is little surface land the Island has never been without water, a sufficient supply has always been found in one spot or another. Ever since the mines were worked, Little Sark has suffered, and still suffers considerably in times of drought. Since that date several of the best springs have dried up, and many of the small ones have flowed less freely.

The reason that Sark has so many springs of water may be owing to the top of the Island being very nearly a level plateau, thus retaining all the rain that falls, and allowing none to be wasted by running into the sea.

The principal springs are situated in the valleys, and flow through them as tiny rills till they reach the sea. The deepest wells (and there are not many) are not sunk below forty feet; and in rainy seasons the water rises to the top. The deepest springs are those of the Moinerie and L'Ecluse,

and they form the largest brooklet of the Island, sufficient for St. Maglorius and his successors to have built and kept up a water mill in that spot. True they had constructed a series of reservoirs with sluices, in order to accumulate a sufficient body of water to turn the mill when the springs were low. There is a gentle run in Dicart valley, also at the *Ville Roussel*, and another on the way down to the Creux. It is these rills that drain the more elevated portions of the Island.

Many visitors who come over in the height of summer, express surprise at the fresh and verdant appearance of Sark. This is no doubt due in a great measure to evaporation from the sea, and to the frequent and heavy dews. Yet if the season be a very dry one, the cliffs become much browned and burnt, and they look greener than they really are from the carpeting of furze and fern which covers the hillsides. Furze has the property of attracting and condensing every particle of moisture from the air about it, and this keeps it ever fresh and green.

The heaviest rains come from the S.W. and N.W. When a thunderstorm comes up from the S. or S.W. it often divides in two parts, one half passing over Jersey, and the other over Guernsey, leaving nothing for Sark. The same thing happens with certain squalls ; Guernsey diverts the course of the showers, and they pass to the S.E. or N.E. There are few places less subject to thunderstorms during summer time, than Sark.

The worst storms go towards Jersey and the French coast, or else towards Guernsey. But in the autumn or winter, thunder is more frequent, and almost invariably comes from the West.

Before the introduction of the penny postage, a very small number of letters crossed to or from Sark, and few newspapers were brought over, with the exception of one or two from Guernsey. This small collection travelled in the boatman's basket, and was distributed at his leisure, unless the people chose to go and hunt about his basket for their share of the mail. But many did not venture to go and ask for their letters lest some payment should be demanded, and the boatmen themselves did not like to ask for remuneration.

However, little by little, the penny postage induced more correspondence, and a few foreign newspapers found their way with regularity to the Island. Still as the number of visitors increased each year, the irregularity of the mails was found to be a great inconvenience. There was a private depôt kept in Guernsey for Sark, and often during the height of summer the boatmen's baskets were quite full of letters, etc., but there was no one to distribute them, for the boatmen were not paid to do it, and they did not care to work for nothing. Then there was the difficulty of finding out which man to apply to, or what basket to upturn in order to find one's letters. Some of the residents had their own private mail-bags, and by that means were saved all trouble and delay.

Militia

It has been already shown how Queen Elizabeth gave the Island of Sark to Hélier de Carteret, Seigneur of St. Ouen, upon condition that he would keep forty men capable of bearing arms for the protection and defence of the Island. The Seigneur, in his turn, in leasing out a part of the land in forty tenements, required of the tenant or proprietor that he should keep a musket, together with the ammunition and accoutrements belonging to a soldier. Since that time, whenever the Seigneurs of the Island have formed additional tenements (numbering at the present time twenty) they imposed the same conditions upon these last as upon the original Forty. In this way the Seigneur has a right to expect every holding, however small, to provide a man with musket, ammunition, and accoutrements. No mention is made of uniform or military dress, and it is probable that such things were not thought of during the two first centuries of the colony.

The Seigneur was obliged to train and keep these men under military discipline, drilling them in the use and management of the musket, and in target practice. He also reviewed them perhaps two or three times a year.

The Governor of Guernsey came yearly to Sark to inspect the Militia and ascertain if it was maintained in accordance with the conditions of the Royal Licence made to the Seigneur of the Island.

Sir Philip de Carteret (successor to his father Hélier) having neglected to fulfil these conditions, he was severely reprimanded by the Governor, Sir Thomas Leighton, who made a complaint to Her Majesty in Council.

As the Seigneurs de Carteret were constantly absent from the Island they confided the superintendence of the Militia to their deputy or attorney, or to some influential persons of the Island, and they finished by establishing as a permanency a captain for the Militia, almost always selecting for that post a Sarkese or a resident on the Island ; and the names of some of these captains have been preserved.

This state of things, lasted for a long while, except during the period of the Rebellion, when Guernsey kept a small garrison in Sark, in consequence of the Jersey people having, in the interest of the King made an attack upon Sark under the command of Captains Lané and Chamberlain.

The recollection of this attack, and also other reasons not stated, induced the Chief Pleas of Sark in 1676 to make the following ordinance : "On the representations of Her Majesty's officers, that it was expedient that the lessees of the tenants of this Island should be subjected to keep a look out and bear arms in war time as well as the Forty Tenants, the Court, thereupon, after taking the general opinion of the Island, have decided that henceforward they shall be so

subjected; to which all have unanimously agreed."

Further on, January 18th, 1744, "it has been ordered that all and every one from the age of sixteen to sixty years shall keep watch and guard each one in turn."

Several years after this the Sark Militia was put upon the same footing, and subjected to the same rules, regulations, policy, and duties, as that of Guernsey; it also enjoys the same privileges and honours as those of the other islands, and was made a Royal Militia by order of King William IV.

In order to preserve to the Seigneur of Sark his rights and privileges in connection with the armed force of the Island, he was given the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel.

To conclude this subject an extract is given from Professor Ansted's work on *The Channel Islands*, p. 552.

Every male between the ages of sixteen and sixty is bound to render man-service to the Crown. . . . The extent of this service in law, is that each man should provide himself with arms and ammunition, attend drill when required, keep watch and guard round the Island by night and day, repair the bulwarks, keep the garrison when no troops of the line are in the Island, and perform all other services for defence. . . . The Islanders are altogether free from other claims, and during the late war were not liable to impressment in the navy, nor can any man be required the leave his own island . . . neither does it appear that the militia have ever been subject to martial law. In ordinary times of peace the dress, arms and

accoutrements as well as ammunitions are all supplied by the Sovereign.

At the present day (1875), the two companies forming the Sark Militia number together from seventy to eighty men, between the ages of sixteen and forty-five ; the older men to the age of sixty constitute a reserve, and were till within the last ten or twelve years regularly trained as Artillerymen. The two brass six-pounder field-guns with their limbers and ammunition-waggons, harness, etc., still remain in the so-called Arsenal at Sark.

The Militia is armed with rifles, to the use of which they are drilled by a paid Officer Instructor of Musketry, and the men go through an annual course of target-practice, a set of targets and everything required being supplied by the Government. There were according to returns on the books as effectives, 1 Lieut.-Colonel ; 1 Captain and Adjutant ; 1 Surgeon, 2 Staff-Sergeants (unpaid) ; 7 Company Sergeants, and 62 Rank and File, under forty-five years of age, besides 5 Vingtoniers, 4 Orderlies, and 11 Recruits—in all 100 men under forty-five years of age ; and with a Reserver of 4 Sergeants and 25 men under sixty years of age, the respectable total of 128 effective men, of all ranks, is reached. And this be it remarked out of a population of 551 : being actually in the proportion of one in four and a seventh ! According to what is known in these

islands as the Cardwell scheme for reorganizing the Militia, but which has been greatly improved by the Government of Mr. Disraeli, the Militia of Sark is limited to seventy-five effectives, with officers, etc.[1]

Language of Sark

A few words will not be amiss on the Sark Language, for it has its peculiarities as might be expected.

From the earliest commencement of the new colony, although the inhabitants had come principally from Jersey and were true Jerseymen with their own peculiar language or *patois*, the Ministers of the established Church were, for the first two centuries, almost all Frenchmen. They had all received a good education at the continental universities or colleges, and their language was that of educated men. They spoke and preached to the Sark people in what was considered good French for the times in which they lived ; and this has been continued up to the present day. One or two of the ministers have been natives of the Channel Islands, but they were well acquainted with French and always spoke it correctly. The children attending school were taught the language correctly and not according to their *patois*.

In this way the French tongue has been perpetuated in Sark, varying slightly according to

[1] The Militia was disbanded in 1880.

the different times or periods, and the people understand good French and speak it with tolerable exactitude. But they do not give it the proper pronunciation nor intonation.

The Sarkese employ a language between themselves, which has descended from father to son and been preserved almost in its original purity. They brought it with them from Jersey, where in those early days it already was a *patois*. No doubt since then it has undergone some modifications caused in part by the use of a better French spoken in the church, schools, and court; but they are slight, owing to Sark being out of the way of much intercourse with strangers.

It is evident that the Sark *patois* is undergoing changes and gradually becoming extinct. The children do not now pronounce it so well nor so clippingly, nor with that seemingly careful and sharp sounding of every vowel and consonant, to be noticed in the speech of the older generation. This loss of originality is due to the strangers who visit the Island, to the instructions received at the schools, and to the steady introduction of the English language. It is now more interspersed with good French ; and many English words have been adopted, either retaining the English pronunciation or else giving them a French sound.

As must have been remarked in the course of this history, the Seigneur of Sark plays a prominent part throughout, and is a personage of considerable importance. He is, as it were, the

pivot, or centre, round which turn all the affairs of the Island.

It is therefore only natural that a short section should be devoted solely to him in order to give the reader more clear information on the subject. This is all the more necessary that the greater number of those who have written about Sark, have made strange mistakes in the matter, and have represented the Seigneur in a somewhat singular and sensational light. Few of those who have taken upon themselves to describe Sark have made a sufficiently lengthened stay to enable them to gather together correct information ; they have sought rather to amuse their readers with absurd exaggerations ; and the Seigneur has come in for his full share of misrepresentation. It will therefore be desirable that a few accurate particulars should here be given, explaining what the position of the Seigneur of Sark was, and is now.

According to the Patent of Queen Elizabeth, the Island was given in its entirety to Hélier de Carteret, Seigneur of St. Ouen, subject to certain obligations towards the Queen, specified in the Patent. The Queen gave up all her rights into his hands. In order to utilize this property, Hélier de Carteret ceded a good portion of it to the colonists whom he had brought with him. He did not make it over to them unreservedly, but he leased it in perpetuity under specified conditions, which, if they failed in fulfilling,

authorized the Seigneur to cancel the lease. So long as the tenant paid his rent and other seigniorial dues, he retained possession of the land, with the certainty that unless he chose to sell it, for which the Seigneur's permission could readily be obtained, his estate must descend intact to his next heir. It therefore comes to this, that all the proprietors of the Island are simply holders in perpetuity from the Seigneur.

Although in several instances the tenants have redeemed their ground-rents, the Seigneur has never consented to cede or alienate any of his other rights or conditions over the proprietors and their lands. The ground is still his, and no one may sell the usufruct of it without the Seigneur's permission, which is only granted upon receiving the thirteenth part of the price at which the estate is to be sold.

This constitutes a strong claim and gives the Seigneur a firm hold upon all the land of Sark. No one is absolute proprietor, and independent of the Seigneur. Moreover he is still the largest landowner in the Island, and this gives him the foremost place amongst the tenants. These considerations show in some measure the importance of the Seigneur's position.

The Patent of Queen Elizabeth, and also that of James I (of which an epitome has been given elsewhere), show the extent of his other numerous rights. Nearly the whole of these rights still exist, and can be brought into force in case of necessity.

The Seigneur commands the armed force of Sark. And notwithstanding the laws that have recently been passed, modifying the condition and standing of this armed force and incorporating it in the Royal Militia of the Channel Islands, he still retains his place, and holds the commission of Lieutenant-Colonel, whatever may be his social rank or vocation. The present Seigneur, the Rev. W. T. Collings, although a clergyman, has been obliged to fill this post, in order to preserve his other rights and privileges.

Although the Seigneur does not act as Magistrate in the Island, he nevertheless nominates the Seneschal or sole judge of Sark, the Registrar, and also the Sheriff. It is only by his permission that the legislative body of Sark can meet. And in order that it may form resolutions and issue ordinances, his presence or that of his deputy is necessary : still he cannot refuse an annual assembly (that held at Michaelmas), but it must be in his presence or that of his deputy.

As Seigneur he does not vote with his tenants, but he has the power of putting a veto to any ordinance that he considers not advisable for the Island, or that would infringe upon his rights and privileges. If he places his veto to any proposition, the tenants have the right of appeal to the Royal Court of Guernsey. But a veto is of rare occurrence, as the Seigneur is present and can give his reasons.

One of the Seigneur's rights is " Le Droit de

Tavernage" or the power to grant licences to keep hotels or public-houses. He also is the patron of the Sark benefice, and he presents the clergyman to the Bishop to be licensed.

List of the Seigneurs of Sark

Hélier de Carteret, 1565.
Sir Philip de Carteret.
Sir Philip de Carteret.
Sir Philip de Carteret.
Sir Philip de Carteret.
Sir Charles de Carteret.
Lord Carteret afterwards Earl Granville.
James Milner, 1721.
The Bishop of Gloucester.
Mrs. Susan Le Pelley *née* Le Gros 1730.
Nicholas, Le Pelley.
Daniel Le Pelley.
Peter Le Pelley.
Peter Le Pelley.
Peter Le Pelley.
Ernest Le Pelley.
Peter Carey Le Pelley.
Mrs. T. G. Collings, 1852.
Rev. W. T. Collings, 1853.

Court of Sark

In 1594 five Jurats, the senior to act as president, were established by an order in Council of 1583. This jurisdiction lasted till 1675; when, as we have elsewhere shown, the present order of things was substituted by Patent of Charles II, establishing a Seneschal, Registrar, and Sheriff, all to be nominated for life by the Seigneur. The following is a complete list of the Seneschals of Sark down to the present time :—

Peter Gibaut, 1675.
Thomas De Beauvoir.
Philip Dumaresq.
Amice Le Couteur.
John Le Couteur.
John Falle.

John Paiut.
Philip de Carteret.
Peter Le Masurier.
Henry Le Masurier.
Elias Le Masurier.
Philip Guille.
Thomas Godfray.

Ministers of Sark

Cosmé Brevin, 1570.
Baudinel.
Elie Brevin.
Moses Benoit.
Peter De Camon.
Elie du Fresne.
Vital Privat.
James Levrier.
Peter Levrier.
Cayenne Deschamps.
John Vibert.
Paul Secretan.
Nicolas Bernel.
J. M. De Joux.
Thomas Orange.
Frederick Bailhache.
Proctor.
Bonamy Le Cocq.
J. L. V. Cachemaille.

List of the names of the first inhabitants of Sark, who came with the Seigneur of St. Ouen, or soon after. Taken from the Registers from 1570–1603.

Hamon.[1]
Brevin.
Poindextre.
Griphon.
De Carteret.[1]
Guille.
Le Conteur.
Christin.
Rogier.
Dolbel.
Vaudin.[1]
Gueste.
Mahier.
Pipet.
Masurier.[1]
Gaudin.
Noel.
Huc.
Dubois.
Nicole.
Baleine.
Rhoe.

[1] Only seven names of this list still in the Island, 1875

Alexandre.
Dupré.
Vibert.
Le Broc.
Le Bouvier.
Jagau.
Tanqueray.[1]
Le Cerf.
Martin.
Quedey.
Hotton.[1]
Sloly.
Romery.
Des Claudes.
Des Landes.
Smith.
Brayer.
Paychin.
Chevalier.
Gregory.
Le Gros.

Since writing that portion of the historical sketch of Sark, beginning with the sixth, and ending with the sixteenth century of our era—the author has made acquaintance with several important documents, which have furnished him matter wherewith considerably to amplify his account of this period.

The life of St. Magloire well deserves to commence the history of this period. If he has an undoubted claim to be styled the Apostle of the Norman Archipelago, he may yet more justly be called the Founder of Sark. He left the illustrious name he bore, and throughout his lifetime sustained so well, as a legacy to Sark ; which has preserved it, in some sort, till now. Sark is still sometimes called the Isle of St. Magloire.

St. Magloire caused a population of educated men—many of them belonging to noble families, —to take root in Sark. And even when this

[1]Only seven names of this list still in the Island, 1875

population perished at the hands of brigands, it was by reason of the cherished tradition of its ancient prosperity that a new colony came to settle upon the Island. The neighbouring Island of Jersey perceived the danger of permitting Sark to be uninhabited and at the mercy of the first comer ; it was therefore peopled once more, and has so continued unto this day.

Emyr Lhydau, of Breton origin, was Seigneur of a territory in Armorica, towards the end of the fifth century ; one of his sons, Amon d'Hy, Amon le Noir, was the father of our St. Sampson. Having returned to Glamorganshire, he there married the daughter of Maurice, the sovereign of the province. She was named Anne ; and this Anne was sister to Afrella, the mother of our benefactor, St. Magloire. Umbrafel (Umbradelus, G. Du Pont) brother of Amon, obtained the hand of Afrella, the third daughter of King Maurice. From this alliance descended Magloire, one of the most zealous of missionaries and the founder of the mother church of our deanery, namely that of Sargia, nowadays called Sark.

(The name Maglorius is derived from Mac Glor or Macgloir, a " son of glory."—Ferd. B. Tupper's *History of Guernsey*.)

He was born in 535 in the Bishopric of Vannes, of rich and noble parents, of Celtic origin. At the age of five years he was sent to Wales, and confided to the care of his uncle St. Iltut, the cele-

brated Abbot of Glamorganshire, who instructed him in piety and literature.

Another account says that Sark was governed and administered by a petty sovereign (*regulus*) named Radwal, and that it was he who gave St. Magloire sufficient land whereon to establish a monastery.

St. Magloire chose the site of his monastery most admirably ; the surrounding land is some of the best in the Island, and in sight of Guernsey, close to the sea, near a small bay offering every convenience for navigation or fishing in the fine season.

The path leading down to it was neither too long nor too steep, and was easily made practicable. A few yards from the house was an abundant spring of fresh water ; the form of the valley lent itself without difficulty to the construction of ponds and reservoirs that secured a good supply of water, whilst the stream was sufficiently strong to turn a mill, and this probably induced him to erect one. There is every reason to believe that it was he who built the mill at the foot of the valley, where there is a cascade or small waterfall about ten or twelve feet high. The platform of coarse masonry, without mortar, upon which the mill once stood, may still be seen to this day some eighty feet above the bay to which it gave the name of the *Port-du-Moulin*, or " Harbour of the Mill."

The monastery was not far from L'Eperquerie

which, in those far distant times, is thought to have been the sole harbour of Sark, and the most convenient place for the boats engaged in fishery, even then an important trade.

Although there was no properly constructed harbour for this purpose, they could find numerous bays all round the Island where boats might be moored during the greater part of the year ; to one or other of which their anchorage might be shifted according to the prevailing wind.

There are also several places where boats might be hauled up high and dry during rough weather, and set afloat again in case of need.

Soon in answer to the appeal of the Breton missionary, more than sixty *religious* (*monachi*), says the *History*, came hither from the coasts of Neustria, Brittany (Armorica), and the Greater Britain. A school was founded according to general usage for those children for whom their parents wished to obtain instruction and Christian education. This fact is revealed to us by the account of one of those miracles with which legendary literature loves to adorn the lives of saints. The scholars of St. Magloire, who were youths of noble extraction (*Parvuli monachi "nobili prosapia" editi*), came one day to ask his permission to go and play far off on the beach so as not to disturb by their pranks the meditations or the slumbers of the monks, who after a prolonged fast, had just made a copious meal. The holy man gave them leave, and his benediction,

and down they went by the steep path to the place which had been designated by the Greek word *akté*—doubtless the Port du Moulin of to-day.

They found an old rotten vessel ashore on the beach just above high water mark, and got into it. They had only been on board a few minutes when a violent hurricane coming on launched the hulk into the water ; the current carried it rapidly away and drifted it out to sea without oars, sails or rudder. The unfortunate passengers, paralyzed with terror, could do nothing but invoke St. Magloire's aid by their tears and cries. The Saint appeared to them bodily in form (*quasi corporaliter*) and steering the boat with his staff brought it safely ashore on the beach of a neighbouring country without the slightest accident.

It would appear that the right of flotsam and jetsam was in full force in that country ; for when the inhabitants saw such a large vessel come ashore on their coast, they prepared to plunder her. But they were so thunderstruck at finding only children on board without the slightest means of navigation, that they thought it an illusion of the devil, and sent a deputation to the King to acquaint him with the event.

The King, as much amazed as his subjects, convoked his *Senate*, and made the children give him an account of their miraculous voyage. Filled with admiration for St. Magloire, he

caused the ship to be laden with grain, flour, wool, clothing, and all manner of useful articles. The counsellors advised that experienced pilots should conduct the passengers and cargo to Sark. But, animated by stronger faith, the King replied that He who had brought over the ship would take charge of it back again into port. In effect it put to sea again of its own accord, and brought up precisely at the spot from whence it sailed three days before.

St. Magloire received his youthful truants with the greatest kindness, and was not insensible to the generous present which had been made him by the chief of the neighbouring country.

The Island of Guernsey whose fertile soil brought forth abundant harvests and nourished numerous flocks, was the hereditary possession of a person of distinction named Nivo, who had an only child, a daughter, and she was dumb. Hearing of the miracles accomplished by St. Magloire, he went to seek the Saint at his convent, and entreated him to heal his child. The holy man replied in his humility that the wished-for benefit could not be obtained from poor humanity, "since, when illness seizes us we know not whether death will suddenly surprise us and the thread of destiny be broken, or whether God shall recall us to life ; it therefore behoves you simply to offer fervent prayers to the Almighty, and give large alms."

Nivo returned sadly to his home, and told

his wife what had passed. She like a sensible woman took advantage of the favourable moment which follows after a good meal to persuade her husband that he should offer the third of their domain to St. Magloire. He consented ; the division of property was made, and the husband and wife returned to Sark with their daughter. They made their offering, and again solicited the intervention of the pious hermit, who now did not refuse it, but cured the dumb girl.

St. Magloire immediately founded a chapel in Guernsey, under the name of the Moinerie, which later on, about 962 was replaced by a monastery or priory established by the Abbey of Mont St. Michel. This did not cause the Church of St. Sampson to be forgotten. The Chapel itself, with the exception of a small portion of its north wall, has disappeared, but left to the field on which it stood, the name of its founder, Magloire, of which the people have made " St. Mallière."

St. Magloire drank neither wine nor beer, and on Wednesdays and Fridays nothing whatever passed his lips.

Some time—it is not known how long—after the arrival of St. Magloire and his sixty-two companions in Sark, a cruel famine (about 586) reduced the richest families of Armorican Brittany to the last necessity, and several families, amongst whom were people of quality, came to the isle of St. Magloire to seek there for the

sustenance which they could no longer find in France.

After the death of St. Magloire the history of Sark loses the greater part of its interest; it is marked by very few events of any importance. But it has still continued to be known as the isle of St. Magloire, and he it is who has preserved it from oblivion.

It appears to be quite certain, from documents examined by M. G. Dupont and cited by him in his work, *Le Cotentin*, *etc.*, that when St. Magloire came to Sark it was not a desert isle, uninhabited and forsaken. It belonged to some personages of high rank, who resided on the neighbouring continent and kept an agent or representative chief in the Island to take care of their property.

Sark yielded a considerable revenue to its proprietors. This revenue was apparently the produce of the chase; also, and more particularly from the fisheries which were so abundant all round the Island, and remain so to this day. The revenue derived from these fisheries continued till the arrival of the Seigneur of St. Ouen, and was assigned to him and to his successors by the Patent of Queen Elizabeth. But many years have already elapsed since it has been abolished, or rather since the Seigneurs of Sark have renounced this privilege of their own free will.

There is no mention before the arrival of

Saint Magloire of any revenue derived from the culture of land. It is difficult to believe that hitherto there had been no culture at all. Guernsey and Jersey were renowned in those far distant times for their agriculture, and wherefore should Sark have remained uncultivated, seeing that its plateau offered every advantage to the farmer? Perhaps the population was not permanent or settled, but was composed of men who lived by the chase and fishermen who only stayed there during the fine season, or during the fishing or shooting seasons, and went away at the coming of winter.

The population must have been tolerably large; a good number probably devoted themselves to agricultural pursuits, above all to the production of vegetables, the chief diet of the monks. They must have cultivated wheat, otherwise why should they have required to erect (as we have abundant proof that they did) a water mill. It is not at all likely that this industry was neglected in Sark, for wherever monasteries were founded, the monks broke up the surrounding land, and brought it into cultivation. The custom was invariable and universal in those times and it was one followed by the working-drones of all monasteries, most of which were placed in uncultivated but fertile localities. Doubtless the motto *Laborare et orare*, was the golden rule likewise in the lonely monastery of Sark.

There was ample communication with the continent and the adjoining islands in order to obtain supplies of provisions and to bring over the numerous rich gifts made to the monastery according to the custom of the period. But it is impossible to believe that St. Magloire, his monks, his scholars, and the rest of the inhabitants could have depended solely upon gifts for the necessaries of their existence. It is more probable that it is from this time that the cultivation of nearly all the arable land of Sark may be dated ; as may be seen from the considerable revenues derived from the Island by several Kings of England.

Revenue received by King Edward I from Sark, 1272 :—

From the annual assize, 100 solidi tournois.

From Champarts, 20 libræ.

From the tenants of the island 82½ quarters of *wheat* annually. (Price of the quarter 6 solidi, equal to about 16s. of our present money.)

500 rabbits worth 10 livres tournois.

From the Poulage, 27 fowls and 83 chickens.

Duty on fish, to the value of 15 livres tournois.

Poulage and tithe of flax, 5 solidi.

Escheats, 2 bushels of Wheat.

Under the same King, and in the same year, Sark was valued for the Royal revenues at 80 livres tournois, and Alderney at 55. (So that Sark must have been much cultivated and inhabited.)

In St. Magloire's days the monastery was

without shelter, and was in one of the most exposed parts of the Island, subject to the assaults of S.W. and N.W. tempests, and to every high wind. Assuredly the winters, frequently hard enough, must have been very trying to this population of poor monks. Doubtless they were of a tougher nature than we can boast and more inured by exposure to brave the inclemency of the weather. Perhaps they willingly submitted themselves to it as a means of mortification. Besides winter is much less severe at Sark than it is on the Continent and in other countries from whence they had migrated.

Numbers of holes in the earth, two or three feet deep, containing pottery and ashes, the latter exhibiting only the charred remains of straw have been found close to each other in certain localities. Perhaps their cooking operations were performed in the open air in the same primitive style that prevails to this day among savage nations.

No doubt that in these times Sark realized the desires of St. Magloire, when it was truly isolated, solitary, and almost inaccessible. All this is changed nowadays. The world has invaded Sark and with it has entered the whirlwind that blows everywhere. We must say adieu to the good and peaceful days of St. Magloire.

M. de Gerville again furnishes us with the following passage :—

" There formerly existed, and probably may

still exist in the archives of Mont St. Michel, provisionally deposited in the library of the town of Avranches, a charter of Neel whereby he gave to this abbey his woods, situated in the Island of Sark." (The charter is dated 942.) "Perhaps," adds M. de Gerville, "Guernsey, *i.e.* Sarnia was meant. But Mr. George Métivier, the accomplished antiquary, objects to this, and believes that it is probably *Sargia*, Sarge, Sark, that is in question. It is also possible that Neel meant *Vis Sargia*, or West-Sark a synonym, in those early days for Guernsey. And yet Eustache, or Wace gives the name Gerneron, or Guernsey, in 630, or Gernesi, following the MS. of the King."

Could there ever have been—was there at any time a forest in Sark? And yet why not? since we know that trees grow there well, and rapidly. In a little more than twenty years the Seigneur of the Island, the Rev. W. T. Collings, has raised a small forest; and several parts of the Island are well wooded.

Rabelais, who passed near Sark, between 1550 and 1556, makes this remarkable statement, that "There was there the most beautiful fountain in the world, and round about it was a great forest." Might not this fountain have been that which flows from Port du Moulin, making a pretty cascade? and may not the forest have occupied the very same ground which the Seigneur has put to the same purpose?

Neel makes a grant of a forest at Sark in 942. Rabelais mentions one—a great one too—as existing there about the middle of the sixteenth century. This conclusion is therefore irresistible that a large part of the Island was covered with trees.

It has been stated above that none of the Islands escaped the ravages of the Northern invaders. This leads us to speak of the traces of their establishment as they are found to exist at Sark.

According to M. de Gerville, three kinds of works indicate the descent and occupation of the Northmen pirates anywhere. A wide and deep trench, cut at right angles to and isolating promontories of land jutting out into the sea, or a river, or even a marsh. Round mounds of earth or redoubts raised within the enclosure formed by the trenches ; and lastly other mounds, of less size, evidently the work of human hands, which he names Tombelles. Notwithstanding its circumscribed space, its extent of scarcely three miles—Sark seems, of all the islands of the Archipelago, to have attracted the most attention from the barbarians, and to have been one of the first occupied by them. That which enticed them was certainly not the picturesque aspect of its rock-bound coast, but the magnificent military and naval position it offered them. The Island was a veritable entrenched camp formed by nature, and by her rendered impregnable.

It has been shown how the Convent of Sark was destroyed ; the pirates established themselves on its ruins, and on each of the promontories of the Island they made an entrenchment, traces of which may easily be perceived at this day. (There are several strongly marked ones at the two extremities of the Island.) One of the most striking as well as the largest amongst these is called Le Château. From thence, to the east, might be seen the high cliffs of the Cotentin, as far as the great encampment at La Hague. Towards the south-east, Jersey. To the west, Guernsey, which also had its stations.

Here must an important observation be made ; if the fortress spoken of by Mr. G. Dupont is that which for three hundred years has been called Le Château or Le Châté des Quénivés, it is not, however, by any means the largest in the Island. Its situation, with the fosse or ditch isolating the steep promontory, the well-marked foundations of irregular stone walls running eastwards to the verge of the precipice—all answer very well to the above description, but that is all. The Great Fort, not far from the Eperquerie, is much larger. There is also the fort at Little Sark, but that is clearly a simple square redoubt ; with a flèche at each corner to form a salient angle as a means of giving a flanking fire—all indicative of a period when cannon were in use, and therefore far too late for the period we are seeking. Both these forts are upon mounds, or natural redoubts,

but likewise enlarged and fashioned by the hand of man.

The *Chronicle of Jersey* attributes the construction of these three forts to the 400 Frenchmen who disembarked on the Island in 1549, under Captain Bruel. It is highly probable that they merely selected what already existed, in order to fortify themselves ; and that they only added necessary improvements for their present requirements. There is every reason to believe that these hillocks were the work of the Northmen, but it is also evident that these forts were occupied in the sixteenth century by the French. In clearing the inside of the fort at Little Sark and at the Châté, much mediæval pottery has been found, besides portions of spears, a poignard, and sundry other articles of iron, also some small ornaments of gold and silver, and a hatchet of bronze and iron.

According to the grant of Duke Richard III, of Normandy, dated 1026, the islands of Sark and Alderney belonged to him. About 1042 William the Conqueror gave Sark and Alderney to the Monastery of Mont St. Michel, which did not long retain the gift, William himself having suppressed it. We shall see, indeed, as we proceed to translate from the *Cotentin* of M. Dupont, that Sark, Alderney, and Herm were conceded to other establishments.

A few small priories, calculated to receive two or three monks only, will represent almost the only proof we can discover of the poverty, piety, or generosity of the Lords

of the land at the close of the twelfth century. The priory of La Bloutière, founded in 1199 by Richard de Rollos, and that of Sark were the only ones established at this period in the Cotentin.

We have seen how, during the sixth century, the monastic colonies, established themselves over the Norman Archipelago; and how, amongst these, Sark was chosen by St. Magloire, for the foundation of his monastery. From this far distant period, the incursions of pirates, the continental wars, the change time brings into the material as well as the moral world, had caused the disappearance of the monastery but had obliterated neither its memory nor its traces.

The Island had, however, always retained a certain number of inhabitants, who in the cultivation of a very fertile soil were able to draw from it a return sufficient for their needs. Works of relative importance had been executed under the direction of St. Magloire, or of his successors. In the convent-enclosure arose dwelling-places (and perhaps an oratory). Not far from thence ran a rivulet, the waters of which were collected to form two or three ponds, the overflow being directed so as to turn a watermill. Six centuries had reduced all this to ruins. But these ruins existed, and recalled their original destination to the mind of the feudal lord who possessed them in the twelfth century. This lord belonged to the powerful family of Vernon, which had succeeded that of Reviers, whose suzerainty extended also over the Isle of Wight; and over fiefs in the counties of Devon and of Dorset, in England. One of them, William, father of the then count, was—in succession to Avenel, Lord of the Castle of Biars whose heiress he had married—Sénéchal of the County of Mortain.

By a charter of 1196, written in the Island of Sark

itself, Richard De Vernon assisted by Peter d'Orglandes his relative, and by Richard d'Ozouville, confirms to the monks of Montebourg the locality of St. Magloire which included the enclosure all round the convent, the platform on which in the Saint's time the mill was built, and the ponds. The chapel was served by a single monk, to whom the sheriff or *obschar* [for so this rather difficult word is written] was to remit every year at the feast of St. Christopher, 30 sous, money of Anjou, to be taken from the £80 of revenue that the giver possessed in the Island ; 10 sous for the lights of Saint Eustache ; and lastly the straw, or litter [*stramen*] of corn or oats, necessary for the firing for the monk.

This charter was but the reproduction of a former charter the date of which is not given, as is often the case with documents of the eleventh and twelfth centuries, and which was delivered to the Abbey of Montebourg by William de Vernon. The first act is more explicit on certain points, than that which confirms it. Thus it appears, on the one hand, that the priory comprised not only the enclosure and the Chapel of St. Magloire, but also the guests who might dwell there ; two acres of land situated beyond the enclosure ; and lastly, right of pasture over the entire surface of the Island. But, on the other hand, that the mill in question was utterly ruined, since the recipients are authorized to build it wherever they might see fit, up to the water's edge. Robert de Barneville, who became monk at Montebourg, added to the preceding liberal donations the gift of 20 sols to be taken from the

100 paid to him yearly by the Vernon family in the same island, *in Serco insulâ in feudum* and a salt house besides at Bevelande.

To add to the interest of this, our collected history, we here append a translation from the Latin charter above mentioned, preceding it with some remarks by M. de Gerville, who discovered and published it.

The following charter for the Island of Sark is, according to sequence of date, the last of the cartulary of Montebourg ; I give it here word for word as I found it. This charter of 1196 is very nearly a résumé of all the most important circumstances which may be found disseminated through many other charters of the same family. When any of these circumstances, omitted in the charter of 1196, seem of sufficient importance to merit particular notice, I will give it in the form of a note, indicating by a figure the number of page or cartulary. The charter of 1196 is the 207th of the cartulary.

Deed of Richard Vernon.

Be it known unto all persons present, and to posterity, that I Richard De Vernon (1) have given, and by this Deed confirmed, to the Abbey of St. Mary, Montebourg, (2) the place of Saint Maglorius [Locum Sancti Maglorii], which is in the Island of Sark, together with the whole of the enclosure, and the site of the mill, which was Saint Maglorius', to be placed wherever may be best and most conveniently done within my domain, with the ponds [*exclusis*] (or milldams), (3) and the straw [*stramen*] of a particular kind (4) namely of oats, as fuel for the monk who shall reside there. I have given [besides this place of St.

Maglorius] to the monk of Montebourg appointed for the service of God in the same, as a perpetual alms for the love of God and the salvation of my soul, thirty solidi (of Anjou); and further, for the chapel of St. Eustache, ten solidi (of Anjou); in such manner that the monk of the aforenamed place may receive all these monies in the same island at one yearly payment, on the feast of St. Christopher, by the hand of my Provost, out of the eighty pounds (of Anjou) [*libris Andegavensibus*] which I was in receipt of, as rent from the said island, and also the land called the "Fossés," and that of "La Hannière" [see following note] which my people and *my agent* [*Obschar*] *for the gathering in of all my harvest have sworne to as belonging to me.* All these I have given to God, and to St. Eustache, and to St. Maglorious as a perpetual alms (6). Done before me in the chapel of St. Maglorious in the same Island, in the year of The Incarnate Word One Thousand One Hundred and Ninety-six, and that this alms may for ever be faithfully observed I have confirmed this present deed with my seal, in presence of these witnesses, Peter d'Oglandis, Richarde de Ozouville, William the Clerk [clericus], Matthew, the Priest [sacerdos] and many others.

MSS. de Gerville.

To this deed a seal is appended. It represented a horseman carrying a shield bearing a saltire. These are known as the armorial bearings of the house of Vernon, to which Matilda the wife of the founder of Blanchelande, belonged. The seal bears the legend,

+ SIGIL. V. RICARDI DE [VER] NONE.

1. The Deed numbered 205 in the afore-mentioned Cartulary of Montebourg, proves that this Richard was

the son of one William who had made a similar gift : " I Richard De Vernon . . . have confirmed the gifts which my father William had made."

2. The Deed numbered 204, granted by William De Vernon at an earlier date, reads thus " the Church (Ecclesiam) of St. Maglorius in Serck, and all the enclosure together with all the buildings (hospitibus) on it, and two acres of land which are outside the enclosure belonging to me, with the house (hospite) standing thereon." The Deed numbered 203, also given by William Vernon, is drawn up in the very same terms, only that instead of " the church (Ecclesiam) of St. Maglorius," it reads " the Chapel (Capellam) of St. Maglorius."

3. These are the terms, only slightly differing one from the other ; which are used in Deeds Nos. 203 and 204 with respect to the mill, viz. : (No. 204), " I give them the site of St. Maglorius' Mill in Sark, with the pond, that the monks may erect their own mill on the same spot whenever they choose." No. 203 which is still more explicit says " the site of St. Maglorius' Mill wherever they choose to place it on the stream down to the sea, in my domain, with the ponds, if more than one are found necessary."

4. Deed No. 203 says " straw of a particular kind belonging to me, viz. of oats or of another kind if preferred." But Deed 205, " with the straw of this particular kind, viz. of wheat." [It is well known that the straw of wheat and of oats is the best fitted for fuel, but neither of them can compare with the varech (vraic, seaweed) now used as fuel.]

5. To the gifts mentioned in this Deed there is added in No. 203 " free and uninterrupted pasturage for his cattle on my property, and over the whole Island."

6. The term (*Obschar*) is one found in Ducange's

Glossary, and signifies a man charged with the duty of gathering into the manorial barns [Granges du Seigneur] all the produce of the harvest, upon which he received a commission.

What has reference to the salt works of Bevelande is mentioned in a deed of Robert de Barneville, which gives the Abbey of Montebourg " twenty solidi out of the hundred solidi which I received as a feudal payment from Lord William Vernon in the Island of Sark, and the Saltpan in Bevelande."

The field called " La Hanière " which was given by the Vernons to the Monastery of Montebourg may still be pointed out ; for a great many tufts of Han (a species of rush, *Cyperus longus*) may still be seen in a field belonging to the farm of Beauregard, where the soil is suitable to the growth of this plant. No Han has yet been found growing in any other part of the Island.

Henceforth, during several succeeding centuries, Sark will appear but seldom in the history of the Contentin and the Channel Islands. There are sundry good reasons for this ; above all its smallness, its isolation, its little value in consequence of the scantiness of its produce and its resources ; lastly because of the continental wars, and the greater importance of the neighbouring islands, absorbing public attention.

But the comparative insignificance of Sark was the cause of its enjoying a long period of tranquillity, and of its escaping many of the woes

consequent on the almost perpetual wars—though it did not escape them all, as will be seen farther on. Its history is like a little thread of running water, which seems to lose itself for a while, but which re-appears from time to time, now widened more and more till it becomes a beautiful river. To prove this, let us draw once more from the sources referred to in the foregoing history.

We read, then, first that in 1205 the renowned adventurer, robber, renegade-monk, or whatever else one may choose to call him, Eustache le Moine—"*Moine devenu demon, pleine de ruse et de perfidie*"—was commissioned by King John of England to endeavour to recover Normandy, which had been re-united to the crown of France the year before, after a separation of 292 years. This Eustache, or Wistace, the Robin Hood of the sea, possessed a wondrous faculty of uniting under his terrible leadership all the daring spirits of the age, the seamen not merely of the southern coast of England, but even of the French littoral, from Dunkirk to Boulogne. These rovers, together with some pillage-seeking Flemings, composed a formidable agglomeration of bold pirates, which, like a cloud of locusts, fell upon and ravaged the islands, and from thence rolled onwards to inflict like horrors upon the opposite coasts of Normandy and Brittany. Some seven years later we find this bold but unscrupulous commander quarrelling with his royal but worthless master. Escaping from the pursuit of the

king's myrmidons, he offers his meretricious services to the King of France. The latter gladly receives this fearless adventurer in the hope of being enabled, with the aid of his undoubted naval talent, to recover for France something of its almost extinct maritime power. Had not Philip himself confessed, after some crushing naval defeat, *que ses Français "connaissaient mal les voies de la mer?"* Therefore he placed Eustache at the head of a formidable fleet with orders to make a descent on the islands of the Norman archipelago. This was near the end of A.D. 1212. The expedition met with only doubtful success; it had no other result but the occupation of the little Island of Sark by a few members of the expedition, among whom were the uncle and brother of Eustache.

Philippe d'Aubigny, at this time Guardian of the Isles, in obedience to the orders of John Lackland, attacked the Isle of Sark about the close of 1213, and took the occupants—the men belonging to Eustache the monk—prisoners.

From certain authentic documents it appears that an attempt made by these French pirates had failed, and that some of their number had been taken prisoners in Jersey (1214); but that, in order to preserve a basis of operations in case of a favourable opportunity arising, they had thrown a small garrison into Sark, which, entrenched behind the natural fortifications that surround the Island, might resist attack provided they could

prevent surprise. This, however, was more than Eustache's men could do, since we read that Philippe d'Aubigny seized them and sent them prisoners to Porchester Castle. (Close Rolls, vol. i, p. 177.)

Once more, in 1216, Eustache went to sea again and set sail for the Islands of the Cotentin. His brothers who accompanied him took possession of them, as in 1213, but this time more successfully, for on this occasion they established themselves firmly.

All the towns, boroughs, etc., which had been occupied by Louis of France during the war, were given back to Henry III. They took care not to forget the Isles of the Cotentin, which had remained in the power of the brothers of Eustache.

It will be easily understood from the ease with which the few men of Eustache's expedition took possession of Sark, that its population—which there is every reason to believe was numerous in those days—was composed of peaceable folk, solely occupied in the cultivation of their ground and in fishing, and that they were not pirates, or evil-doers, as has been said.

On December 8th, 1214, the Bishop of Winton, by order of King John, restored the Island of Sark to Philippe d'Aubigny, Guardian of the Islands. (Patent Rolls, p. 125.)

In the same century Sark was included in the Deanery of the islands ; it is reckoned one of the

parishes of Guernsey under the name of St. Magloire.

The patron of St. Magloire was the Bishop of Coutances : two thirds of the tithes belonged to the Bishop of Avranches, and brought in about fourteen livres. The curate had the other third, and the altar dues, of which the produce in an ordinary year was forty livres. (Another proof of a tolerably numerous population.)

Under Philip Augustus the livre tournois was worth twenty francs thirty-nine centimes ; the sou one franc nineteen centimes, and the denier eight centimes. The pound sterling represented eighty-one francs, thirty-eight centimes ; the sou four francs seven centimes, and the denier thirty-five centimes. It is well known that in order to have the comparative value in our present coinage, the foregoing figures must be multiplied by six.

From 1224 to 1226 during the wars between France and England which greatly affected the islands, it may be supposed that Sark felt the influence of these troublous times, and that it was fortified and well garrisoned on account of its important strategic position, a long time recognized as such.

Sark, Alderney, and Herm were removed from the Abbey of Mont St. Michel by William the Bastard. The Vernon family, to whom Sark appertained, suffered forfeiture of their estates, and the Island returned to Royal possession under Henry

III, who, in 1234, gives to his beloved Richard, Vicar of St. Mary of Sark, in perpetuity, the church tithes.

There must here be an error with respect to the name of the Sark church, for it had always borne the name of St. Magloire, as has been shown above, and in authentic documents.

It is said that in the time of Henry II, father of King John, Raoul de Walmont held assizes in the Island, fieffed a large portion of land, and made them yield a revenue amounting to thirty sous tournois, about thirty francs—a relative value of one hundred and eighty to two hundred francs.

It has been shown—thanks to the charters extracted from the Records of Montebourg—that this monastery possessed a priory called St. Magloire, in the Island of Sark, which had been given it in the twelfth century by the Vernon family. It is also certain that in the middle of the following century the proprietorship had not changed, since in 1338 the English Exchequer was paying a pension to the monks of the sequestrated priories, and particularly to the Convent of St. Magloire in the Island of Sark. And further, according to the foundation charter, it is shown that only a single monk was to inhabit the priory and enjoy the advantages attached to it.

In 1289 the Eperquerie (fishery) of Guernsey brought in one hundred and ten livres, those of Sark and of Alderney respectively fifteen livres.

In 1309 King Edward I confined himself to forbidding, by mandate to the guardian, Otho de Grandison, the inhabitants of the four islands of Guernsey, Jersey, Sark, and Alderney to be cited to appear before the Bishop of Coutances for causes the adjudication of which belonged to the Crown.

The money in circulation in the isles was that current in Normandy ; but during the two years which followed the death of Otho de Grandison, 1329 and 1330, this money was so altered in value, that to make one pound sterling, eight livres tournois were required instead of four.

About the month of April, 1337, the Normans threw themselves upon the Islands of the Cotentin, and committed all sorts of ravages there. The Island of Sark was treated by them with special cruelty : but they did not at this time dream of settling there as conquerors.

About the year 1336 the French secretly afforded assistance to the Scots under David Bruce, who inflicted much evil on the Anglo-Norman islands, burning, slaying, and committing other enormities.

In 1337 there is a commission from King Edward III to levy and train [*adlevando et arriando*] the inhabitants of Guernsey, Jersey, Sark, and Alderney to the use of arms, and array them, according to the amount of population, in thousands, hundreds, and twenties. So that there was already a militia.

In this commission the burning and slayings by the Scots in Sark are particularly mentioned [*quod quidam Scotis, inimiis nostris adhærentes, dictam insulam de Serk, invaserunt et incendia, homicidia, et alia facinora ibidem inhumaniter perpetraverunt*].

In 1338 Bahuchet threw himself upon the Island of Guernsey ; he burnt everything upon it except Castle Cornet, which with the rest of the island, and Sark and Alderney fell into the power of the Normans.

In 1354, Edward III owed a sum of 466 livres 13 sous, 4 deniers to Sir W. Stury, and gave in payment the keep of Guernsey, Jersey, Sark, and Alderney for the space of three years, with right to receive all the profits, issues and revenues of the islands. (In 1375 the livre tournois was valued at ten francs nine centimes, and the sol at fifty-three centimes.)

The name of Sark is constantly associated with those of the other islands throughout the times of King Edward III, which proves that it then was of some importance. In 1373 Edward III gave a sort of power of attorney to William Clasthorp to administer Guernsey, Sark, Alderney, and Herm.

On May 24th, 1374, Edward III made proclamation that he took under his protection and safeguard the islands of Guernsey, Jersey, Sark, and Alderney.

In the reign of Henry IV—1399–1413—the Channel Islands were pillaged in a most inhuman

manner by the French. No doubt to these massacres, as well as to others mentioned above, may be attributed the decay of Sark and the great diminution of the population, which the sequel of its history seems to indicate.

Henry V, one of the successors of Edward III, not content with sequestrating the foreign priories, confiscated them entirely. From this moment, 1412 or 1413, the monks of Montebourg ceased to inhabit the Island of Sark. The Church of St. Magloire was served by a secular priest from England or Guernsey. Henceforward to the middle of the sixteenth century there is no mention of the Church of St. Magloire ; notwithstanding, the building was still standing in 1565. And yet in 1461 there are authentic proofs that Sark was inhabited, cultivated, and paid a handsome revenue to King Henry VI.

In 1470 the livre tournois would represent at least a pound sterling now. During the reigns of Henry VII and Henry VIII—1485–1547—the islands remained unmolested.—(F. B. Tupper's *History of Guernsey.*)

Heylin and Southey observe that when Sark was taken (by the French in 1549) it had only a poor hermitage with a little chapel appertaining to it, the Isle itself serving as a common to the people of Guernsey for breeding cattle. Heylin wrote in 1629, and his book was published in 1656.

Before the taking of Sark by Captain Bruel, the

Island receives only passing mention. Thus in 1460, one Pr. de Brézé, Count of Maulevrier, of Normandy, after having seized Mont Orgueie Castle in Jersey, declared himself Seigneur of the Islands of Jersey, Guernsey, and others (therefore Sark) without having ever been there.

In 1463, Sir Richard Harliston having expelled the French from the Island of Jersey, is named Captain or Governor of the Islands of Jersey, Guernsey, Sark, and Alderney, up to 1479. Nowhere is any mention made of anything or anybody of importance with regard to Sark during these sixteen years.

In the ninth year of Edward IV, the King granted by patent, to the brave men who distinguished themselves at the capture of Mont Orgueil Castle—among these occurs the name of Peter le Serkais—the privilege of exporting from England to Guernsey and Jersey, goods or merchandise of the staple of Calais, the duties on which would amount in any one year to £150 ; or of importing into England goods subject to duties to the same amount. Henry VII, about 1485, in a patent under the Great Seal of England, gives the names of ten Guernseymen and five Jerseymen who most distinguished themselves at the capture of Mont Orgueil Castle. Again the name of Peter *le Serkais* is among them.

It is almost impossible to say anything certain with regard to the Island, its population, and interior economy from 1461–1549. The *Chronicle*

of Jersey, copied by Falle, and by others, says that before the year 1549, the Island had been desert and entirely uninhabited and lonely for upwards of 200 years. What has been said above considerably diminishes this number of years; they would not amount to more than eighty-eight.

Heylin and Southey state that it was occupied by Guernsey folk for the keeping of cattle. Sir Walter Raleigh goes much farther than this, he says : "The Island of Sark having cattle and corn enough upon the place to feed so many men as will serve to defend it." Let us observe that he notes this of the Island when still under the power of Captain Bruel. But the *Chronicle of Jersey* gives as one of the reasons which accounts for the frequent desertions of the French, that "They had no means of growing corn, and could not procure the necessaries of life." How can these opposite statements be reconciled ?

The *Chronicle of Jersey* proves by its silence respecting Sark that it was left quiet during this space of time, from 1461–1542. But we cannot believe that it was not inhabited. If Heylin, Southey, and Sir Walter Raleigh are not entirely correct, or of one accord, still what they mention leads us to think that the Island was not desert or abandoned. It is very probable that the last pillages and massacres of the French had greatly reduced its population, and that many had taken refuge in Jersey or Guernsey for protection.

Therefore we conclude that what Heylin and Southey say is the nearest truth.

Perhaps this population was not stationary or permanent, and the Island itself may have been once more in 1549, in the condition in which it was at the arrival of St. Magloire. It must be added that the fishery, always abundant round the Island, had not been abandoned, and the probabilities are that it attracted a more or less permanent population to the Island during the greater part of the year. Sark has always up to this time had its ground for drying and salting fish, named L'Eperquerie because the fish was suspended from long poles until it was dry enough for purposes of commerce.

Even to this day the surroundings of the Island are the richest in fish, and boast of several of the most highly-prized kinds, which bring stranger fishing-boats, especially from Guernsey, to the environs of the Island. Thus even if Sark had only become a fishing station, it would not have been "totally deserted and lonely." It offered too many advantages for sport and for the keeping of cattle to be entirely abandoned.

It is easy to imagine that when Captain Bruel disembarked his 400 convicts upon it, they slew all the inhabitants of the place in order to make themselves absolute masters of the Island, and to have nothing to fear from enemies or traitors. The state of want to which they speedily came seems to prove this.

After the year 1549, the obscurity and incertitude respecting Sark begins to disappear. The way is plain, it is easy to follow the thread of its history down to our own day. An interesting and important event marks this year, which we give in words of the *Chronicle*, and the *History of Jersey*, by Falle.

During the time that H. Corniche was Lieutenant of the Island of Jersey, numbers of the King's ships came to Guernsey. At that time there was war between Edward VI, King of England, and Henry II, King of France. Since the aforesaid men of war were at Guernsey, eleven galleys belonging to the King of France anchored off the L'Eperquerie, in the Isle of Sark, in 1549. The galleys easily effected a landing in this Island, for there was no force to defend it.

They put 400 men ashore, with the intention of remaining there, and they constructed there three small forts, one close to L'Eperquerie, in Great Sark, another near the Coupée in Little Sark, the third, which was the smallest, called the Château des Quenevets in Great Sark. An officer named Captain Bruel was in charge of these forts, and held the government of the Island.

During the time that the French occupied the Island of Sark a ship laden with munitions for Sark was wrecked on a rock near the Island. The men saved themselves at Carteret, on the opposite French coast, in the boat. The pilot would have been hanged if that rock had been set down in chart or map.—Note from Elie Brévint's MS., Minister of Sark in 1610.

This rock is called "La Grune du Bouillon," to the East-South-East, a league from the coast. It is the same rock on which H.M.'s steamer *Eagle* struck when bringing over to Sark Rear-Admiral Sir Thomas Paisley, then in command at Portsmouth, and his family.

We resume the history of Captain Bruel and his troop :—

After a sojourn of five or six years they grew weary of their hardships, because they had no means of growing corn, and could not procure the necessaries of life ; so that by degrees they returned to their country, one by one, till at last only a few (some say thirty), remained by Captain Bruel.

We now proceed to give the simple, natural, and most probable account of the recapture of Sark from the French, as we find it recorded in the *Chronicle of Jersey*. The author wrote about 1585, only thirty years after the event which certainly took place during his lifetime, and so was fresh in the memory of the people. The recapture from the enemy of so important a position must have made some sensation in all the neighbouring islands, by reason of its having been for years a standing menace to them all, and as the account thereof is given by a clever, well-informed and correct narrator, we incline to believe his version to be the true one. So far as is known this account in the *Chronicle* above-named is the very first ever given of the expulsion of the French from Sark.

It came to pass about that time [1555], there came to Guernsey sundry ships from Holland, fitted out to make war against those French who still garrisoned the Island of Sark. We have already said that the greater number, through poverty and discouragement had betaken themselves to their own land; therefore was the conquest of the Island most easy.

The Flemings embarked in their small boats, and came ashore at Little Sark, accompanied by a few Guernseymen as guides to show them the way to the forts. Arriving at night, they found no watch kept, and making directly for the forts they seized the sleeping garrison in their beds, without encountering the slightest resistance.

Now being masters of Sark, the Flemings sent a deputation to Queen Mary who had lately married King Philip of Spain, to offer the Island of Sark to Her Majesty, as a present, advising her of the manner in which they had driven the French out of it. But she made no account of their gift, and granted them neither recompense nor reward; whereupon did the Flemings return discontented; and Sark remained uninhabited as aforetime.

But that it might not be reoccupied by the French, persons were despatched by Sir Hugh Powlet, Captain of the Island of Jersey, to demolish the forts that had been erected by the French. After which they returned to Jersey, leaving the Isle of Sark once more vacant, no one in those insecure days being found desirous of risking life or property on so isolated a spot.

We may conclude from this statement of the doings of Sir Hugh Powlet, that the fact of the retaking of Sark was quickly known in Jersey, and why not also the manner of it? Hélier de Carteret, Seigneur of St. Ouen, and ten years

after this feat of arms, Seigneur of Sark, was then twenty-four years old, and so of an age to have taken deep interest in the destruction of an enemy's stronghold so near to his own manor. His eldest son was born in 1564. He was twenty-six years old when he inherited the Seigneurie of Sark. He is said to have been the writer of the *Chronique*, and must often have heard of the recovery of Sark from the French when the event was quite fresh in everybody's memory. Therefore we think, with other writers, that the account given in the *Chronicle* of the expulsion of the French is the true one, and we accept it as such.

But various writers have published a romantic account of the recapture of the Island, which greatly differs from that of the *Chronicle of Jersey*. Sir Walter Raleigh is apparently the first who gave it to the public ; and he was copied by Heylin, Southey, Falle, and Syvret (in his additions to the *Chronicle* of Sir Philip de Carteret) ; and since then all who have written upon Sark have repeated it with variations. Here follows Sir Walter Raleigh's account, copied from Falle, page 49 :—

Sir Walter Raleigh who was sometime governor of Jersey, and informed himself with great care of all the peculiarities of the history of these islands, gives the following relation of the recapture of Sark from the French. He says it was taken by a stratagem, which for contrivance and success he prefers to many of the ancients.

The Island of Sark (continues Sir Walter) joining to Guernsey, and of that Government, wasin Queen Mary's time (rather King Edward VI) surprised by the French, and could never have been recovered by strong hands, having cattle and corn enough upon the place to feed so many men as will serve to defend it and every way so inaccessible that it might be held against the Great Turk [and yet we have shewn in the course of our history how, in 1214, it was retaken by the strong hand of Captain d'Aubigny, Governor of Guernsey, from the 54 men left in it by Eustache Le Moine.]

Notwithstanding these natural advantages it was (says Raleigh) by the industry of a gentleman of the Netherlands in this sort regained. He anchored in the roads with one ship, and pretending the death of his merchant, besought the French that they might bury their merchant in hallowed ground of the chapel of that isle ; offering a present to the French of such commodities as they had aboard. Whereto (with condition that they should not come ashore with any weapon—no not so much as a knife), the French yielded. Then did the Flemings put into their boat, a coffin not filled with a dead body, but with swords, targets, and harquebuzes. The French received them at their landing, and searching every one of them so narrowly as they could not take even a penknife, gave them leave to draw their coffin up the rocks with great difficulty. Some part of the French took the Flemish boats, and rowed aboard their ship to fetch the commodities promised, and what else they pleased, but being entered, they were taken and bound. The Flemings on the land, when they had carried the coffin into the chapel, shut the door to them, and taking their weapons out of the coffin, set upon the French. These run to the cliff, and cry to their companions aboard the Fleming

to come to their succour. But finding the boat charged with Flemings they yielded themselves and the place. I have seen memoirs (continues Sir Walter) which confirm the taking of the island by such a stratagem [perhaps the Latin MS. of Sir Philip de Carteret, but the other circumstances of time and persons do not agree with the foregoing story].

Raleigh's *History of the World*, book 4, ch. 9, s. 18. Hakewell's *Apology* 258. Heylin's *Survey* 296. Thus, says Sir Walter, a foxtail doth sometimes half well to piece out the lions skin, that else would be too short. The Archdeacon calls it a stratagem in his judgment matchable to any that ever yet he heard of. And Peter Heylin says, it is to be compared, if not preferred, unto any of the ancients, did not the fatal folly reprehended once by Tacitus still reign amongst us; "we extol the former days, and are careless of the present." It was, however, no new stratagem, nor ought any stratagem ever to be recorded with approbation, in which the generosity or humanity of an enemy has been abused. SOUTHEY.

This account is in formal contradiction with that of Sir Philip de Carteret. The two accounts relate to the same date, under Mary's reign, about 1556; and treat of the same retaking of Sark from the French. Which of the two is the true one? As we have stated above, Sir Philip de Carteret is anterior to Sir Walter Raleigh; his father was now of a ripe age; his uncle by marriage, Sir Hugh Powlet, was then Governor of Jersey, and he was writing his *Chronicle* only twenty-nine to thirty years after the event he describes—the facts of which therefore must

have been fresh in the memories of his contemporaries. We have seen that the joyful news was known at once in Jersey, and we may conclude that it was known with every attending circumstance.

Had the Flemings employed the stratagem mentioned by Sir Walter Raleigh, Sir Philip de Carteret must certainly have heard of it ; and he would have inserted it in his *Chronicle* as he inserted the other ; or he would have recounted both as current reports. But he says nothing whatever about it, neither does he allude to it in the least.

It may certainly therefore be concluded that such a stratagem was not made use of in 1556 to expel Captain Bruel and his fifty wretched soldiers from Sark. If such a stratagem was employed at all for the depopulation of Sark, it must have been long before this date, 1556. Now Falle gives a copy of an old Latin MS. saying that it belonged to Sir Philip de Carteret, Seigneur of St. Ouen, which contains a similar stratagem. We append a copy of it, translated from the Latin.

The Sark Islanders, a set of marauders, holding false lights in the night to sailors and merchants in order to cause shipwrecks on their rocks, to profit by the loss of the ships. The which loss having happened to some English from Rye and Winchelsea and others, being irritated, and unable to avenge themselves openly of the insult done to them, they effected it by an artifice. They pretended the death of the master of the ship, and besought

the Islanders to suffer the body to be interred in their chapel, which request was granted upon condition that those who attended the body should be unarmed. Therefore the English filled the coffin with arms and swords instead of a dead body. Having landed and entered the Chapel, they open the coffin, they sally out against the Sark people unprepared ; they kill them and devastate the Island.

John Jacob, Esq., in *Annals of British Norman Isles* 1830, says the above artifice took place after the Monks left Sark . . . some time in the reign of Edward III. We observe that this MS. is without date ; at least neither Falle nor Sir Walter Raleigh, who says that he has seen some ancient memoirs having reference to the stratagem, or to the expulsion of the French, give any date ; and that of John Jacob is but supposition. It is therefore now impossible to fix this date. And farther, according to this MS., the stratagem was not employed by Flemings as Sir Walter Raleigh says; it was done by English merchants from Rye and Winchelsea, not to recapture the place, but to punish the pirates who had wrecked one or more of their ships. They kill everything, leave the Island deserted, and do not go and offer it to Queen Mary.

This account is very different from that of Sir Walter Raleigh. He has decidedly sketched a totally different time. It is doubtless for this reason that Sir Philip de Carteret says not a word about it on the occasion of the expulsion of Captain

Bruel. As the *Chronicle of Jersey* begins with the eighth century and ends in 1585, had there been anything true or certain in the affair of the stratagem, the author would have inserted it on account of its interest and its singularity.

It is true that Sark has been invaded several times in days far distant, and in comparatively modern times by the Norman, the French, the Scots, the Spaniards, etc. But this kind of folk, these pirates, went more openly to work. However this may be history says nothing that can be taken in confirmation of the Latin MS., nor that can determine its date.

There have been times when the population of Sark was considerable, and others when it has been much reduced by the massacres perpetrated by pirates. But we nowhere read that these invaders absolutely depopulated it, albeit this is affirmed by the Latin MS. It is only after the expulsion of the French in 1556 that it is quite certain that the Island was really uninhabited.

We may say, in conclusion, that it seems certain that the stratagem was not made use of in 1556. And seeing that the Latin MS. is without date, and nothing is known that confirms it in history, and that Sir Philip de Carteret, who is said to be its possessor, has not inserted this startling event in any part of his *Chronicle*, it cannot be accepted with confidence. It must be left amongst the numberless legends of ancient times, when they were loved and sought for and consequently

multiplied. The story of the Trojan Horse may well have suggested the legend of the coffin landed at Sark which is not the only one of such imitations. Perhaps Sir Walter Raleigh was acquainted with this Latin MS., and because in his time people still spoke of the retaking of the Island by the Flemings, he might have imagined some error in the MS., with regard to the actors, and because it was without date, assigned that of 1556 to it.

As a parallel to the stratagem reported to have been used at Sark in 1559, we append the following from the *Roman de Rou* which it is not improbable may have suggested the romantic story long attached to the little Island of Sark. Hastaing, one of the most daring and skilful of the Norwegian adventurers, embarked with his followers on board their fleet, intending to land in Italy. They reached the coast of Tuscany and encamped before Luna, a town which they mistook for Rome. When Hastaing arrived before the town, he found it in a complete posture of defence. The Norman leader now resolves to employ a stratagem, seeing that he cannot carry the place by assault. He sends a messenger to the Bishop, declaring he has no hostile intention ; that he has been driven from his own country ; that his fleet were forced on the coast by stormy weather, and that if his health was not in a precarious state he would immediately put to sea. He asks leave to buy provisions, expressing his contrition

for the ravages he had committed in France, and finally begs to be baptized, and to be received into the Christian Church, for the salvation of his soul. The people of Luna believe his protestations. His followers obtain all necessary supplies. Hastaing is baptized and then pretends to be dead. He is put into a coffin and carried to the gates of the town. The deception produces such an effect on the inhabitants that the gates are freely opened to the pretended mourners ; all the clergy are in attendance to solemnize the obsequies of this convert. The procession enters the cathedral. The Bishop begins to recite the funeral service, when Hastaing springs out of the coffin, draws his sword, and cleaves the poor Bishop right down to the brisket. His followers imitate his example and a fearful massacre ensues.

Ferdinand B. Tupper says that the account by *Chronicle of Jersey* of the retaking of Sark is most probable.—(*History of Guernsey*, p. 237.)

We have seen above that when Sark had been retaken from the French in 1556, and all their buildings and their forts had been demolished, it was left vacant, no one for some time being found willing to live there on any account. Yet it was not left desert long, for the Lord of Glatney, in the land of Normandy, perceiving that Sark was thus without inhabitants went to the King of France, and laid before him the manner in which Captain Bruel had lost the Island, and had

permitted its capture, without having made the least defence, and how through his fault and negligence the Island was now uninhabited. He prayed the King of France to give him this Island, that is, to grant it to himself and his descendants as a heritage, engaging to have it colonized at his own cost and expense.

The King granted his request ; and the Lord of Glatney sent a number of persons to the Island, thinking it would thus become peopled. But not long after war broke out between the Queen of England and the King of France, on account of Havre de Grâce ; which resulted in Sark being once more without inhabitants, as aforetime. And now men would have judged that the fate of Sark was sealed. She was indeed alone and abandoned, but God was providing for her a true deliverance for thus was shaken off the yoke of France. Beneath the protecting ægis of free England she has no fear of ever again appertaining to France or being reunited to that divided nation. She has tasted, and indeed has drank long and delicious draughts of liberty and would not again place herself under the yoke of bondage.

Full of life and prosperity as Sark was for centuries, she has shared the fate of many states infinitely greater than herself but now no longer aught save ruins. Like everything that has existence here below, she too has grown old : cruel oppressions, and men athirst for blood have drained her more than once, very nearly to the

point of death : but not altogether ; Sark recovered though she did not regain her pristine vigour. When again she was scarcely showing signs of returning life some cruel enemy exhausted her anew, and reduced her to the brink of the grave. Several times have they thought her dead ; Captain Bruel and his 400 soldiers had in some sort given her the *coup de grâce*. But Sark had only fainted, she roused herself for a moment and then fainted away again. Now indeed they thought she was for ever gone : her heart had ceased to beat, and she showed no sign of life whatever. And yet she was not dead ; and was not to die : she had imperishable life within her. St. Magloire had as it were sanctified the Island, he and those belonging to him had offered up many prayers for her. " The memory of the just is a blessing," and " the prayer of a righteous man availeth much." No ! Sark was not dead, for she has come to life again, a new life, full of health and power. She has risen with the freshness of youth. In answer to the prayers offered up in her behalf, God raised up, in the sixteenth century, a man according to his own heart, who restored the Island, and planted his new colony so well that it has grown and prospered to the point at which we see it to-day.

Thesuccession of the Seigneurs, Seneschals and Ministers of Sark to the year 1875 is recorded on page 240, but in order to bring these records down to the present day the following amplified lists are

here printed, together with those of other officials of the Island.

During the half century, since the foregoing history was written, the old Sark, with all its unique charm and attractiveness, has passed away. Up to 1890 the change was but slightly perceptible, but became more and more evident with advancing years ; the rapidly increasing numbers of visitors flocking to the Island necessitating accommodation for them.

Firstly, the two hotels were enlarged—Dicart annexing many rooms. To the small, thatched Belair was added the large east wing and other buildings.

The hotel now known as Stock's was built on the site of the charming old homestead of the Godfrays. The ancient house of Beauregard being destroyed by fire in 1891, was rebuilt and much enlarged in 1892 as a boarding house.

Several other substantial boarding houses were also built.

A Pavilion was built at Vauroque and has been thrice enlarged. The Bungalow Hotel on Little Sark has also been erected. Finally bungalows, became the rage and are put up on every available spot. As demand for residences increased land was leased for twenty-five years by many people, and good houses were built. The first was " Le Petit Camp " by Mr. Bellin, then followed " Chaumière " by Mr. Baker of London ; " Vermandaye " by Sir Hilgrove Turner, Attorney-

General of Jersey ; "La Rade" by Major Ingram of Shrewsbury ; "La Petite Genetière" by Miss Mansell ; "St. Magloire," Rev. George Lee, Guernsey ; "Châlet," Mrs. Judkins.

Within fifty years thirty-three properties have changed hands, and on most of them up-to-date houses have been built, many replacing the old-world Sark dwellings.

In 1900 there were 131 houses ; in 1928 there are 216, the census remaining the same, under 600. The numbers on the Boys' and Girls' Schools' Registers are now 30 : before the war there were between 60 and 70. In addition to this there is a small girls' school, with about 15 pupils. The girls were taught sewing and domestic work and the boys trades. The Island possessed carpenters, builders, and blacksmiths to meet the demand for labour and excellent artisans they were. There are only now a few left, and labour has to be imported.

Fishing is extremely lucrative and easier since the incoming of motor-boats, and the visitors' excursions round the Island, so the young men prefer the sea. Constant demand has been put forward at the Chief Pleas for more protection for boats in harbour, for which a poll tax of 1s. is levied on visitors, which is much objected to, our fares to Guernsey being already very high—5s. now, against 2s. 6d. formerly—to which is added the 1s. tax, and often 6d. for landing in small boats. The harbour has been much improved

during the last fifty years. Strangely, there was no shelter of any kind for fishermen or visitors excepting the tunnel ; over twenty years ago the idea of this want occurred to Miss Hale, who suggested it to the authorities who were unanimous in accepting her proposals for a site at the harbour, and agreed to leave it in her hands ; at the same time subscribing £50 towards the scheme : with further help from her family and friends she built the little shelter, at a cost of £163. This provided work at a time that was much needed by the men.

The harbour at the Havre-Gosselin was built in 1912 for the convenience of fishing and landing of passengers, when unable to do so at the Creux Harbour

The church was much improved by the addition of a chancel in 1880, given by the Seigneur, Rev. W. T. Collings. New pews replaced the old high ones. A pulpit to the memory of Rev. J. L. V. Cachemaille, by the parishioners, replaced the high " three decker ". Later were added improved lamps and chandeliers provided through receipts from concerts. A fine brass lectern was also given by the parishioners to the memory of Rev. Charles Vermeil (who succeeded Mr. Cachemaille). The present fine toned bell replaced the one now used on the boys' school, and was cast and engraved in France in 1883 (at the suggestion of Dr. Hale) from two brass six-pounder field guns formerly used by the Sark

Militia. The tower was also raised and a new clock inserted.

In 1926 the church was further much improved by stained glass windows supplied by Messrs. Moore and Son, London. The first was given by Mr. Thomas de Carteret, La Vauroque; the second, in memory of the Sark men who fell in the Great War, viz. :

Pte. W. Mollet.	Pte. H. Baker.
„ C. W. Guille.	„ J. Guille.
„ S. de Carteret.	„ T. Carré.
„ J. T. Guille.	„ J. S. Carré.
„ P. Guille.	„ J. Guille.
„ H. J. de Carteret.	„ H. Carré.
„ F. Battle.	Dvr. R. B. Falle.
„ W. R. Hamon.	Corpl. R. Toplis.

Capt. Marden, the third in memory of his wife ; the fourth by Major Ingram and his pupils; the fifth by the Misses Hale to the memory of their family.

The churchyard being full, a new burial ground lying parallel with the church was given by the late Seigneur, Mr. W. F. Collings, as a general place of burial for Sark. The first cemetery was given by the then Seigneur, Sir Philip de Carteret, in 1607, the second by the Rev. W. T. Collings in 1855.

It may be interesting for readers to be reminded that the church was built in 1820 at a cost of a little over £1,000. This was raised by £400 granted by the Society for Building Churches on

condition that half the sittings, 168, should be free ; the remaining half of the sittings were divided into closed pews containing 3, 4, or 5 sittings, which were sold to those who wished to have them, and was thus attached to the proprietor's farm to form a part thereof, and cannot be separated or sold away from it. A repair rate of 5d. is annually raised on EACH SITTING for the repair and maintenance of the church. If more is needed, the Seigneur binds himself to pay the difference.

The original Wesleyan Chapel was built in 1796 : a simple stone structure with two small rooms over the entrance for the use of preachers who came from Guernsey ; when the chapel was enlarged in 1835 these rooms were replaced by a gallery.

The property on which the chapel was situated changed hands, and the present owner, Mr. Duncan Henderson, C.B.E., objected to the close proximity of the building to his dwelling house, and offered to give a plot of land free on another part of his estate (together with the material of the old building) whereon a new chapel might be built. The difficulty of the land laws presented itself ; but after prolonged efforts a petition was presented to His Majesty the King to grant his royal assent to the partition of the estate, and the consent of the Seigneur and the Chief Pleas having been obtained, a fine new chapel in a better position was built at a cost of £2,993 14s. 2d, and

opened free of debt in 1925 (as the old one was in 1796), and thus another old landmark passed with several surrounding thatched cottages.

The first Post Office was proposed in 1838, by the Seigneur, Mr. Le Pelley, but the suggestion fell through, the number of letters being too few to justify the expense and the boatmen continued to carry what mail there was in their baskets, with a private bag between the Vicar and the then Seigneur, Rev. W. T. Collings, who lived much in Guernsey and for whom the Vicar acted as deputy, and daily letters were written ! In 1857 a successful attempt was made and a Post Office was established at La Heiche, a small thatched cottage (now replaced by a large house at La Collinette) that was also the general emporium presided over by an old man named Queripel who became the first Post Master, and carried the mail over his shoulder from the harbour. During that year 1,500 letters were posted. Now the mail is a cartload ! The second Post Office was at New Place, the Post Master, Mr. Elie Guille. The present Postmastership has been held by the Baker family since 1881.

The telegraph working between Guernsey and Sark commenced on April 8th, 1903. The terminal instrument was then, as now, a telephone.

The Lighthouse was built in 1912-13.

Railings were placed on La Coupée 1900.

The first coal depôt was built by Mr. Godfray in 1883.

Mr. John Henry's coal depôt built in 1903.

The Steam Packet coal depôt built in 1910.

The Guard Houses erected at various points had 'phones connected with Headquarters of the officer in command in 1914.

The Midland Bank opened in 1925.

Old Guernsey Bank opened in 1925.

The cattle of Sark are entered in the Guernsey Herd Book, and an Annual Show has been held since 1908, the King giving a ten pound prize since 1910 which is augmented every year by various donors, aggregating a very considerable amount, as the American people come over annually to buy up the Sark-bred cattle, and subscribe to the fund.

SURNAMES IN SARK, 1875

Lefevre,	9	families	Mollet,	5	families
Drillot,	5	„	Godfray,	2	„
Baker,	14	„	Massey,	2	„
Hamon,	27	„	Collings,	1	„
Carré,	14	„	Mauger,	1	„
Guille,	16	„	Rowe,	1	„
De Carteret,	16	„	Cachemaille,	1	„
Hotton	5	„	Grut,	1	„
Des Caudeville or Cook	4	„	Le Page	1	„
Vaudin	5	„	Girard,	1	„
Le Masurier,	2	„	Hazelhurst	1	„
Henry,	1	„	Palot,	1	„
Gascoigne,	1	„	Remphry,	1	„
			Any Brechou,	1	„

New Names in 1928

Marden.	Lamb.
Durand.	Henderson.
Platt.	Campbell.
Taylor.	Riley.
Ladler.	Picthall.
Mason.	Crampton.

Seigneurs of Sark

	Relation to Predecessor.	*Date of Death.*	
Helier de Carteret			Became 1st Seigneur by Grant in 1563.
Sir Philip de Carteret, Knt.	Son		
Sir Philip de Carteret, Knt.	Son		
Philip de Carteret	Son	1662	
Sir Philip de Carteret, Bart.	Son	1693	
Sir Charles de Carteret, Bart.	Son	1715	
James Milner		1730	By purchase for £5,000 in 1721.
Joseph Wilcock, Bishop of Gloucester...	Nephew-in-Law		By purchase in 1730.
Mrs. S. le Pelley		1733	By purchase in 1730 for £3,700.
Nicholas Le Pelley	Son	1742	
Daniel Le Pelley	Brother	1752	
Peter Le Pelley	Son	1778	
Peter Le Pelley	Son	1820	
Peter Le Pelley	Son	1839	
Ernest Le Pelley	Brother	1849	
Peter Carey Le Pelley ...	Son		
Mrs. T. G. Collings ...		1853	By purchase in 1852 for £6,000.
Rev. W. T. Collings ...	Son	1882	
William F. Collings... ...	Son	1927	
Sibyl Mary Beaumont ...	Daughter		

Senechals of Sark from 1675 to 1928

Pierre Gibault, 1675.
Thomas de Beauvoir, 1680.
Philippe du Maresq, 1683
Jean Payne, 1703.
Philippe de Carteret, 1707.
Robert Slowley.
James Milner.
Pierre Le Masurier, 1752
Henri Le Masurier, 1777
Amice Le Couteur, 1785.
Jean Falle, 1815.
Elie Le Masurier, 1830.
Philip Guille, 1841.
Thomas Godfray, 1851.
William de Carteret, 1876.
Abraham Baker, 1881.
Thomas Godfray, 1891.
Kenneth Campbell, 1920.
Ashby Taylor, 1922.
Frederick de Carteret, 1925.

Note.—Until 1922 the Court officials were not paid excepting by Court Fees which were divided between the Sénéchal, the Greffier, and the Prévôt. From this date the Sénéchal's stipend is £100, the Greffier's £30, and the Prévôt's £20.

Greffiers of Sark from 1675 to 1927

Thomas Machon, 1675.
Jean Esnouf, 1711.
Pierre Le Masurier, 1734
Henri Le Masurier, 1752
Thomas de Carteret, 1784.
Elie Le Masurier, 1819.
William Robert, 1837.
Jean Vaudin, 1855.
Joseph Mollet, 1891.
Philip Carré, 1898.
Philip Thomas Carré, 1927.

Prévôts of Sark from 1741 to 1920

Robert Slowley, 1741.
Thomas Godfray, 1819.
Thomas Le Masurier, 1855.
Hirzel Baker, 1871.
Alfred Baker, 1920.

Ministers of Sark from 1570

Cosmé Brévint, 1570.
Baudinel.
Elie Brévint.
Moses Benoit.
Peter De Camon.
Elie du Fresne.
Vital Prevat.
James Levrier.
Peter Levrier.
Cayenne Deschamps.
John Vibert.
Paul Secretan.
Nicholas Bernel.
J. M. De Joux.
Thomas Orange.
Frederick Bailhache.
Proctor.
Bonamy Le Cocq.
J. L. V. Cachemaille.
Charles Vermeil, 1877.
L. N. Seichan, 1896.
J. Eagles Harston, 1922.
E. N. Greenhow, 1926.

Doctors of Sark from 1840 to 1928

Dr. James.
„ Baines.
„ Godfrey.
„ Gally.
„ Ryall.
„ Fry.
„ Leigh.
„ Coulston.
„ Lowdell.
„ Stradling.
„ Wills.
„ Gatehouse, drowned 1868.
Dr. Lowdell.
„ Wills.
„ Cocksedge.
„ Akerman, 1880.
„ Hale, 1882.
„ Robinston, 1897.
„ Belbin, 1901.
„ Adams, 1901.
„ Taylor, 1902.
„ Lazenby, 1924.
„ Lake Hope, 1924.
„ Pittard, 1927.

Mrs. Ramsey, who lived at La Maisonette for many years, supplemented the doctoring of the Island most efficiently during vacancies between appointments.

Constitution of Sark

The first Constitution was granted to the Island by Queen Elizabeth in 1583, and, with the exception of certain minor changes in 1675, 1827 and 1832, had remained unaltered until 1910; when the Seigneur and others of Sark, having considered it advisable that the ancient Ordinances should be revised to be more in keeping with the present age, made a Humble Petition to the King in Council that he would be pleased to make certain changes in the Constitution.

On April 12th, 1922, the Committee of the Privy Council reported to the King in Council that in their opinion changes in the administration and Constitution were necessary, whereupon His Majesty was pleased on June 20th, 1922, to ordain that such changes should be made in the existing Constitution as are set forth in the following decree :—

AT THE COURT OF BUCKINGHAM PALACE

The 20th day of June, 1922.

Present :

The King's Most Excellent Majesty.

Lord President.	Sir Frederick Ponsonby.
Lord Steward.	Hon. Lord Salvesen.
Mr. Munro.	Mr. L. C. M. S. Amery.

Lieut.-Col. Leslie Wilson.

Whereas there was this day read at the Board a Report from the Right Honourable the Lords of the Committee

of Council for the Affairs of Guernsey and Jersey, dated the 12th day of April, 1922, in the words following, viz. :—

"YOUR MAJESTY having been pleased, by Your General Order of Reference of the 10th day of May, 1910, to refer unto this Committee the humble Petition of William Collings, Esq., Seigneur of Sark, Kenneth Jeffry Ranker Campbell, Esq., Lieut.-Colonel (retired), Seneschal of Sark, and Alfred Baker, Esq., Provost of Sark, praying that Your Majesty may be graciously pleased to declare that it is Your Royal will and pleasure that certain changes in the administration of Your Majesty's Island of Sark set forth in the said Petition have the force of Law in the said Island :

"The LORDS OF THE COMMITTEE in obedience to Your Majesty's said Order of Reference, have taken the said Petition into consideration, and do this day humbly agree to report, as their opinion, to Your Majesty as follows :—

"That the Island of Sark is and has been from time immemorial a parcel and member of the Bailiwick of Guernsey, and dependant upon the jurisdiction of the said Bailiwick :

"That Her late Majesty Queen Elizabeth did by letters patent grant the said Island to Hilary de Carteret, Seigneur of St. Ouen, to hold in chief by the twentieth part of a knight's fee :

"That in the year 1582 the Royal Court of Guernsey upon submission made to them by the officers of the Queen found that the jurisdiction of a Bailiff and 12 Jurats had been set up in Sark and that it was not lawful for any subject to establish any such jurisdiction without the authority of the Prince :

"That the said matter, having been referred to Her Majesty's Council the Lords of the Council by an Order dated the 24th day of April, 1583, made provision for the civil government of Sark as follows :—

"'Article 2nd.—For the civil jurisdiction in Sarq. We think it convenient that there be five Jurats chosen by the inhabitants of Sarke, unless the people increasing shall require a greater number : then, by Her Majesty's Order, to be augmented to seven, and the eldest of the said Jurats to give sentence, as is used in Alderney.

"'Article 3rd.—These Jurats to hold Pleas and use jurisdiction in Sark, in all causes, as is used in Alderney, and appeals likewise to be from Sark to Guernsey, as to the superior Justice, in all causes as is used in Alderney.

"'Article 15th.—Item : that, in Sark, the inhabitants shall observe the ancient laws and customs confirmed, to be established by Her Majesty, as in Alderney.

"'Article 16th.—Item : touching Ordinances, or byelaws to be made for matters within the Island of Sark ; we think it convenient to refer to the Lord and the inhabitants of Sark, from time to time, as they shall see necessary for the welfare of that Isle, until your Lordships upon special complaint shall see cause to take other order.'

"That the Royal Court of Guernsey for the purpose of putting into effect the said Order of the Lords of the Council made an Ordinance for the regulation of the holding of Chief Pleas, the making of Ordinances, and the administration of Justice in the said Island of Sark :

"That in the year 1675, there being no longer any persons eligible to hold the office of Jurat in Sark, His late Majesty King Charles II did by order under his hand

direct the Royal Court of Guernsey to give oath to a Seneschal and to establish such other officers as should be requisite for the administration of civil justice in Sark, who should be named by the Seigneur :

" That in the years 1827 and 1832 the Royal Court of Guernsey made Ordinances regulating the constitution of the Chief Pleas of Sark and the manner of transacting business therein, and defining the powers of the Seneschal in the administration of Justice.

" And that certain reforms in the constitution and administrative arrangements of the Island of Sark having become urgently necessary, it may be advisable for Your Majesty to order that the constitution of the Island of Sark be reformed accordingly."

His Majesty having taken the said Report into consideration, is pleased, by and with the advice of His Privy Council, to approve thereof and to order, as it is hereby ordered, that the constitution of the Island of Sark be reformed as hereinafter stated, viz. :—

CONSTITUTION OF THE ISLAND OF SARK

The Chief Pleas

1. The Chief Pleas shall be composed as follows :—

   (*a*) The Seigneur or in his absence his Deputy.
   (*b*) The Seneschal or in his absence his Deputy.
   (*c*) The Tenants.
   (*d*) Twelve Deputies to be elected every three years for a term of three years by the inhabitants other than the Tenants.

The Seigneur, if he is unable to be present at the sitting of the Chief Pleas, shall nominate a deputy to attend in his place.

It shall be the duty of the Seneschal to preside at the sittings of the Chief Pleas, but if he is unable to be present he shall nominate a deputy to preside in his place.

The Prévot, the Greffier, and the Treasurer shall attend all meetings of the Chief Pleas, but shall have no vote.

The Chief Pleas shall continue as at present constituted until the first election of Deputies in accordance with the provisions of this Order.

2. The following shall be qualified to vote for the election of deputies and to be elected as deputies, viz., inhabitants of Sark who

(*a*) being males have attained the age of 20 years, or being females have either attained the age of 30 years or are liable to contribute to the "direct tax" and have attained the age of 20 years; and

(*b*) are British subjects; and

(*c*) have resided in the Island for 12 months at least; and

(*d*) are not subject to any legal incapacity. "Legal incapacity" shall have the same meaning as in Article XIII of the *Loi supplémentaire à la loi relative à la Réforme des États de Délibération* adopted by the States of Guernsey on 13th August, 1920.

3. Each member of the Chief Pleas shall have one vote, except that in the case of an equality of votes the President shall have a casting vote in addition to his vote as a member of the Chief Pleas. No member shall be entitled to vote unless he is present in person at the meeting.

4. The Chief Pleas shall meet as at present, viz., on the first Wednesday after the 15th January, the first

Wednesday after Easter, and the first Wednesday after Michaelmas.

In addition they shall meet whenever they are summoned by the Seneschal with the consent of the Seigneur, or whenever they are directed to meet by the Lieutenant Governor of the Bailiwick.

5. The Chief Pleas shall have the same powers as heretofore of making Ordinances for the maintenance of good order and for regulating the local affairs of the Island, subject to the veto of the Seigneur. The Chief Pleas may appeal against the veto of the Seigneur to the Royal Court of Guernsey, who may confirm or annul the veto in its discretion.

Unless vetoed, an Ordinance shall be registered by the Greffier and published by him in such a manner as may be prescribed, and shall from the date of such registration and publication have the force of law, always provided that every Ordinance shall be transmitted to the Royal Court of Guernsey, and the Royal Court may annul any Ordinance on the ground that it is unreasonable or *ultra vires*. The Chief Pleas shall have the right of appeal to the Privy Council against any decision of the Royal Court under this provision.

Finance

6. The Treasurer shall under the direction of the Chief Pleas prepare annually at the Michaelmas sitting an Estimate of the expenditure by or under the authority of the Court for public purposes, and of the revenue to be received, during the ensuing year, and submit the same to the Lieutenant Governor for approval.

7. The consent of His Majesty in Council shall be

required as heretofore for any taxation proposed by the Chief Pleas.

8. No expenditure shall be incurred otherwise than in accordance with the Estimate as approved, except with the consent of the Lieutenant Governor on behalf of the Crown.

9. All receipts of revenue shall be paid in full to the Treasurer and the Treasurer shall keep a full and accurate account of all receipts and expenditure. The Treasurer shall submit accounts quarterly of revenue and expenditure to the Lieutenant Governor, and a complete account at the close of each year, which shall be audited by an auditor approved by the Lieutenant Governor.

10. The Foregoing provisions shall not apply to expenditure for the purposes of the Douzaine and the revenue raised by "direct tax" for such purposes. The amount of the "direct tax" for such purposes shall be fixed annually by the Chief Pleas at the Michaelmas sitting.

Douzaine

The Douzaine shall consist of 12 members. The members shall be appointed by the Chief Pleas at the Michaelmas sitting each year. Two shall retire each year, but shall be eligible for re-appointment. The Douzaine shall cause accurate accounts to be kept by the Constable and Procureur des Pauvres of all revenues received for Douzaine purposes, and of all expenditure incurred for such purposes. The Douzaine shall submit to the Chief Pleas at their Easter and Michaelmas sittings accounts of the receipts and expenditure up to those dates and a complete account of the year at the close of the year. The Douzaine shall continue as at present constituted until the next Michaelmas sitting of the Chief Pleas.

Officers of the Island

12. The Officers of the Island shall be the following, viz. :—

The Seneschal,
Prévot,
Greffier,
Treasurer,
Constable,
Vingtenier.

The Seneschal shall be appointed by the Seigneur for a term of three years with the approval of the Lieutenant Governor and shall be sworn in before the Royal Court of Guernsey. He shall be eligible for re-appointment. He shall not be removable during his term of office except at his own request or by the direction of the Crown.

The Prévot, Greffier, and Treasurer shall be appointed from among the inhabitants of the Island by the Seigneur with the approval of the Lieutenant Governor and shall be sworn in before the Seneschal. They shall only be removable with the consent of the Lieutenant Governor or by the direction of the Crown. The offices of Greffier and Treasurer may be held by the same person.

The Constable and Vingtenier shall be appointed by the Chief Pleas.

The persons at present holding the posts of Seneschal, Prévot, Greffier, and Treasurer shall vacate the same as from the date of this Order, and the persons at present holding the posts of Constable and Vingtenier shall vacate the same as from the date of the next Michaelmas sitting of the Chief Pleas, and appointments to fill the vacancies shall be made forthwith in accordance with the provisions of this Order.

In the event of any default on the part of the Seigneur, or Chief Pleas to appoint the officers mentioned in this Article, the power of appointment shall vest in the Crown.

Any officer may be paid from the revenue of the Island such salaries as may, from time to time, be approved by the Crown.

The duties of the Prévot, Greffier, and Treasurer shall, in case of doubt, be determined as regards the Prévot and Greffier by the Royal Court of Guernsey, and as regards the Treasurer by the Lieutenant Governor on behalf of the Crown.

It shall be the duty of Our Lieutenant Governor to see that the said Officers carry out the duties of their offices faithfully and well.

Seneschal's Court

13. The Court of the Seneschal shall be the sole Court of Justice in the Island. There shall be an appeal therefrom to the Royal Court of Guernsey, and the said Royal Court shall determine the jurisdiction to be exercised by the Seneschal's Court in civil and criminal matters. It shall be the duty of the Greffier to act as Clerk of the Court, and of the Prévot to collect all fines imposed by the Court and all fees and charges payable to the Court. All fines imposed or fees or charges payable to the Court shall be paid over by the Prévot to the Treasurer of the Island to be carried to the revenues of the Island.

14. The Seneschal's Court shall be the authority for granting licences to inns and places for the sale of intoxicating liquors and tobacco. The fees for licences shall be fixed by the Chief Pleas with the approval of the Seigneur and shall be paid to the Treasurer to be carried to the revenues of the Island.

Police

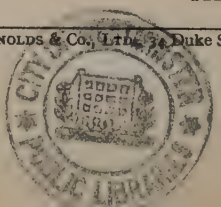
15. One or more police constables shall, on the application of the Seigneur, from time to time, when occasion requires, be detailed for duty in Sark by the Inspector of the Guernsey States' Police, from the Police in his charge, and shall act under his orders. The cost of the police while so detailed shall be borne by the revenues of Sark and paid to the Treasurer of the Guernsey States. If at any time the Lieutenant Governor considers that police are required in Sark and the Seigneur fails to apply for them, the King's Procureur in Guernsey may make the application in place of the Seigneur.

Miscellaneous

16. All other matters concerning the powers and duties of the Chief Pleas, the election of deputies thereto and the manner of conducting business therein shall be regulated by the Royal Court of Guernsey, subject to the provisions of this Order. The Chief Pleas shall have the right of appeal to the Privy Council against any regulation of the Royal Court under this provision. All matters concerning the assessment and collection of revenue and the accounting for the same shall be regulated by the Lieutenant Governor on behalf of the Crown.

And His Majesty doth hereby further direct that this Order be entered upon the Register of the Island of Guernsey and observed accordingly.

And the Lieutenant Governor or Commander-in-Chief of the Bailiwick of Guernsey, the Bailiff and Jurats, and all other His Majesty's Officers, for the time being, in the said Bailiwick, and all other persons whom it may concern, are to take notice and govern themselves accordingly.

Almeric Fitzroy.

Printed by A. G. Reynolds & Co., Ltd., 3, Duke Street, St. James's, S.W.1.